



№ 5613. 11q

21-29



GIVEN BY  
U. S. DEPT. OF DOCUMENTS





U. S. DEPARTMENT OF LABOR  
CHILDREN'S BUREAU  
JULIA C. LATHROP, Chief

GOVERNMENTAL PROVISIONS IN THE  
UNITED STATES AND FOREIGN COUN-  
TRIES FOR MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY  
FORCES AND THEIR DEPENDENTS

—  
PREPARED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF  
CAPT. S. HERBERT WOLFE, Q. M., U. S. R.  
DETAILED BY THE SECRETARY OF WAR

—

MISCELLANEOUS SERIES No. 11  
Bureau Publication No. 28



WASHINGTON  
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE  
1917

## PUBLICATIONS OF THE CHILDREN'S BUREAU.

### Annual Reports:

Third Annual Report of the Chief, Children's Bureau, to the Secretary of Labor, for the fiscal year ended June 30, 1915. 26 pp. 1915.

Fourth Annual Report of the Chief, Children's Bureau, to the Secretary of Labor, for the fiscal year ended June 30, 1916. 27 pp. 1916.

### Care of Children Series:

No. 1. Prenatal Care, by Mrs. Max West. 41 pp. 4th ed. 1915. Bureau publication No. 4.

No. 2. Infant Care, by Mrs. Max West. 87 pp. 1914. Bureau publication No. 8.

### Dependent, Defective, and Delinquent Classes Series:

No. 1. Laws Relating to Mothers' Pensions in the United States, Denmark, and New Zealand. 102 pp. 1914. Bureau publication No. 7. (Out of print. Revised edition in preparation.)

No. 2. Mental Defectives in the District of Columbia: A brief description of local conditions and the need for custodial care and training. 39 pp. 1915. Bureau publication No. 13.

No. 3. A Social Study of Mental Defectives in New Castle County, Del., by Emma O. Lundberg. 38 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 24.

### Infant Mortality Series:

No. 1. Baby-Saving Campaigns: A preliminary report on what American cities are doing to prevent infant mortality. 93 pp. 4th ed. 1914. Bureau publication No. 3. (Bureau supply exhausted. Copies may be purchased from Superintendent of Documents at 15 cents each.)

No. 2. New Zealand Society for the Health of Women and Children: An example of methods of baby-saving work in small towns and rural districts. 18 pp. 1914. Bureau publication No. 6.

No. 3. Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in Johnstown, Pa., based on births in one calendar year, by Emma Duke. 93 pp. and 9 pp. illus. 1915. Bureau publication No. 9.

No. 4. Infant Mortality, Montclair, N. J.: A study of infant mortality in a suburban community. 36 pp. 1915. Bureau publication No. 11.

No. 5. A Tabular Statement of Infant-Welfare Work by Public and Private Agencies in the United States, by Etta R. Goodwin. 114 pp. 1916. Bureau publication No. 16.

No. 6. Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in Manchester, N. H., based on births in one year, by Beatrice Sheets Duncan and Emma Duke. 135 pp., 4 pp. illus., and map of Manchester. 1917. Bureau publication No. 20.

No. 7. Infant Mortality: Results of a field study in Waterbury, Conn., based on births in one year, by Estelle B. Hunter. 1917. Bureau publication No. 29. (In press.)

### Industrial Series:

No. 1. Child-Labor Legislation in the United States, by Helen L. Sumner and Ella A. Merritt. 1131 pp. 2 charts. 1915. Bureau publication No. 10.

Reprints from the above are also issued, as follows:

Child-Labor Legislation in the United States: Separate No. 1. Analytical tables. 475 pp. 2 charts.

Child-Labor Legislation in the United States: Separates Nos. 2 to 54. Text of laws for each State separately.

Child-Labor Legislation in the United States: Separate No. 55. Text of Federal Child-Labor Law. 1916.

No. 2. Administration of Child-Labor Laws:

Part 1. Employment-Certificate System, Connecticut, by Helen L. Sumner and Ethel E. Hanks. 69 pp. 2 charts. 1915. Bureau publication No. 12.

Part 2. Employment-Certificate System, New York, by Helen L. Sumner and Ethel E. Hanks. 164 pp. 3 charts. 1917. Bureau publication No. 17.

No. 3. List of References on Child Labor. 161 pp. 1916. Bureau publication No. 18.

No. 4. Child Labor in Warring Countries: A brief review of foreign reports, by Anna Rochester. 75 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 27.

[Continued on third page of cover.]

U. S. DEPARTMENT OF LABOR  
CHILDREN'S BUREAU  
JULIA C. LATHROP, Chief

GOVERNMENTAL PROVISIONS IN THE  
UNITED STATES AND FOREIGN COUN-  
TRIES FOR MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY  
FORCES AND THEIR DEPENDENTS

—  
PREPARED UNDER THE DIRECTION OF  
CAPT. S. HERBERT WOLFE, Q. M., U. S. R.  
DETAILED BY THE SECRETARY OF WAR

—

MISCELLANEOUS SERIES No. 11  
Bureau Publication No. 28



WASHINGTON  
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE  
1917

ADDITIONAL COPIES  
OF THIS PUBLICATION MAY BE PROCURED FROM  
THE SUPERINTENDENT OF DOCUMENTS  
GOVERNMENT PRINTING OFFICE  
WASHINGTON, D. C.  
AT  
25 CENTS PER COPY

## CONTENTS.

	Page.
Letter of transmittal.....	9
Introduction.....	11
Pensions in the United States.....	15-26
A. Army and Navy retirement.....	15
B. General pension laws.....	17-20
Disability pensions.....	18
Pensions for dependents.....	19
C. Service pensions.....	20
Tendencies in foreign pension legislation.....	26
Austria.....	33-41
Allowances.....	33
Pensions.....	36-41
Disability pensions.....	36
Dependents' pensions.....	36
Method of payment.....	39
France.....	42-67
Separation and other allowances for families of officers and men in active service.....	44-50
Assigned pay.....	44
Separation allowance.....	47
Maternity benefits.....	49
Indemnity for large families.....	50
Indemnity for dependent children.....	50
Military pensions and disability allowances.....	50-60
Disability pensions.....	51
Allowances for temporary disability.....	58
Pension rights of widows and orphans.....	60
Proposed legislation.....	60
Government relief.....	62-63
Immediate relief.....	62
Permanent relief.....	62
Special or occasional relief (secours éventuel).....	62
Other relief.....	63
Guide Barème.....	63
References.....	66
Germany.....	67-113
Provisions for dependents of men in active service.....	67-72
Separation allowances.....	67
Assigned pay.....	70
Indemnity to families for sons in the Army, Navy, or Colonial Forces.....	70
Maternity benefits.....	71
Pensions.....	73-113
Disability pensions.....	73-95
Minimum disability pension for a private.....	75
Maximum disability pension for a private.....	76

## Germany—Continued.

## Pensions—Continued.

	Page.
Dependents' pensions.....	103-109
Minimum war pension for the widow of a private.....	97
Maximum pension for the widow of a private.....	97
Minimum war pension for child of a private.....	97
Maximum pension for child of a private.....	98
Maximum pension for a parent or grandparent.....	98
Sample calculation of general pension for a widow and orphans.....	99
Discussion of formula for a widow's general pension.....	108
Lump-sum payments.....	109
Administration.....	110-113
Disability pensions.....	110
Dependents' pensions.....	111
Lump-sum payments.....	111
Length of service.....	112
References.....	113
Great Britain and British colonies.....	113-151
Great Britain.....	113-136
Introduction.....	113
Army and Navy separation allowances.....	116
Army and Navy disability pensions.....	122-130
Pensions for officers.....	128
Pensions to dependents of men deceased in consequence of the war.....	130-136
Dependents of officers.....	134
Australia.....	137-144
Separation allowances.....	137
Disability pensions.....	141
Pensions to dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.....	143
New Zealand.....	144-149
Separation allowances.....	144
Pensions for disabled men and for the dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.....	145
Union of South Africa.....	149
Principal sources of information concerning the pension systems of Great Britain and colonies of Great Britain.....	150
Italy.....	151-181
Separation allowances.....	151
Pensions.....	154-181
History and general statement.....	154
Retirement pensions.....	156
Disability pensions.....	158
Pensions to widows and other dependents.....	164
Other sources of maintenance.....	174
Administration.....	174
References.....	181
Netherlands.....	182-195
Introduction.....	182
Separation allowances.....	182
Retirement pensions and pensions for disability.....	184
Pensions to widows and children.....	186
Miscellaneous provisions.....	188
References.....	189

	Page.
Russia.....	196-206
Separation allowances.....	196
Pensions.....	197-201
Disability pensions.....	197
Pensions to widows and other dependents.....	200
Administration.....	204
Official committees.....	205
References.....	205
Switzerland.....	206-211
Military insurance.....	206
Civil insurance.....	210
Appendixes: Pensions in the United States.....	213-237
A. Present pension provisions for men disabled in service and for widows and other dependents of men killed or dying in service.....	213
B. Monthly pension rates fixed by law for permanent specific disabilities.....	215
C. Monthly pension rates fixed by administrative rulings for certain disabilities not specified by law.....	217
D. Monthly pension rates for widows or other dependents of men killed or dying as a result of service.....	218
E. Army retirement system, Regular Army only.....	219
F. Navy retirement system.....	221
G. Present provisions for service pensions for survivors of specified wars and for their widows and children.....	227
H. Service pensions for Civil-War survivors under act of May 11, 1912.....	229
I. Principal changes since 1860 in pensions granted for disability or death in service.....	229
J. Principal changes since 1860 in pensions granted for service in specified wars.....	230
K. Annual disbursements (including Treasury settlements) for pensions to United States Army and Navy, 1860-1916.....	233
L. Number of widows, other dependents, survivors, and Army nurses on the pension roll at the close of each fiscal year, 1860-1916.....	234
M. Disability and service pensions (excluding Treasury settlements) paid to survivors and to dependents—number of pensioners and annual disbursements, 1860-1916.....	236

## SCHEDULES.

United States:	
Schedule 1. Monthly pension rates fixed by law for permanent specific disabilities.....	18
Schedule 2. Pensions under public and special laws, 1911-1916.....	26
Tendencies in foreign pension legislation:	
Schedule 3. Comparative schedule of military pay of enlisted men (lowest rank) and of separation allowances to their dependents.....	28
Schedule 4. Comparative schedule of pensions to disabled enlisted men (lowest rank) and their dependents.....	31
Schedule 5. Comparative schedule of pensions to dependents of enlisted men (lowest rank) killed in battle.....	32
Austria:	
Schedule 6. Allowances granted for duration of present war and for six months after its conclusion.....	35
Schedule 7. Army, disability pensions (annual amounts) to noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.....	37

	Page.
Austria—Continued.	
Schedule 8. Navy, disability pensions (annual amounts) to noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.....	38
Schedule 9. Pensions (annual amounts) to widows and dependents of non-commissioned officers and enlisted men.....	40
France:	
Schedule 10. Summary of provisions for the maintenance of soldiers' families.....	42
Schedule 11. Military pay.....	45
Schedule 12. Military pensions.....	52
Schedule 13. Schedule of indemnities (annual amounts, renewable or permanent) for temporary or minor disabilities.....	58
Schedule 14. Present and proposed provisions for ascendants.....	61
Germany:	
Schedule 15. Pensions for disability or service.....	77
Schedule 16. Pensionable salaries of officers of the Imperial Army.....	83
Schedule 17. Pensionable salaries of officers and petty officers of the Imperial Navy.....	85
Schedule 18. Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included.....	87
Schedule 19. Service pensions for noncommissioned officers.....	94
Schedule 20. Pensions for partial disability for noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.....	95
Schedule 21. The general pension to widows and children of officers and enlisted men.....	96
Schedule 22. War pensions (annual amounts) to widows and other dependents of men dying as result of war.....	100
Schedule 23. Gratuities granted to dependents of officers and enlisted men dying in the service or while in receipt of pension.....	102
Schedule 24. General pension of a sergeant major's widow.....	108
Great Britain:	
Schedule 25. Army, classification of rank for separation allowances.....	119
Schedule 26. Army, weekly separation allowance to wives and children.....	120
Schedule 27. Army, special weekly allowance for children under 14 years of age (in addition to ordinary weekly amount of separation allowance for children).....	121
Schedule 28. Navy, classification of naval and marine ratings for separation allowances.....	121
Schedule 29. Navy, weekly separation allowances to wives and children.....	121
Schedule 30. Navy, special weekly allowance for children under 14 years of age (payable in addition to ordinary amounts of separation allowance for wives and children).....	122
Schedule 31. Army, allotment from pay and separation allowance for dependents other than wives and children.....	122
Schedule 32. Comparative rating of specific injuries for enlisted men in the Army and Navy .....	124
Schedule 33. Army, classification of ranks of enlisted men for purposes of pensions .....	125
Schedule 34. Pensions to enlisted men for total disability.....	126
Schedule 35. Army and Navy, weekly pensions for children of disabled enlisted men.....	127
Schedule 36. Army, retired pay to which officers not holding permanent commissions in regular forces are eligible on account of disability.....	129
Schedule 37. Army, retired pay to which officers holding permanent commissions in regular forces are eligible on account of disability.....	130

	Page.
Great Britain—Continued.	
Schedule 38. Pensions to dependents of enlisted men deceased in consequence of war.....	133
Schedule 39. Pensions for dependents of officers deceased in consequence of war.....	136
Australia:	
Schedule 40. Australian imperial forces divided into classes on the basis of daily pay subsequent to embarkation.....	138
Schedule 41. Separation allowances for wives and children of members of the Australian imperial forces.....	140
Schedule 42. Separation allowances for wives and children of British Army reservists.....	141
Schedule 43. Category of disabilities.....	142
Schedule 44. Pensions for disability.....	142
Schedule 45. Pensions to dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.....	144
New Zealand:	
Schedule 46. Separation allowances for wives and children of British Army reservists.....	145
Schedule 47. Classification of ranks for pension purposes.....	146
Schedule 48. Pensions for disabled men and their dependents.....	148
Schedule 49. Pensions for dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.....	148
Union of South Africa:	
Schedule 50. Separation allowances to wives and children of British Army reservists.....	150
Schedule 51. Pensions for dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.....	150
Italy:	
Schedule 52. Separation allowances.....	152
Schedule 53. Army, pay of enlisted men in active service, including yearly amounts for pay, rations, and allowances.....	154
Schedule 54. Army, retirement pensions for officers.....	157
Schedule 55. Fractions to be used in reckoning pensions for officers.....	157
Schedule 56. Disability pensions to officers for injuries incurred in war.....	160
Schedule 57. "Privileged" pensions to noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men disabled in war.....	162
Schedule 58. Pensions to widows and other dependents of officers killed in war, dying of injuries incurred in service, dying in captivity, or missing.....	168
Schedule 59. Pensions to widows and other dependents of noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men killed in war, dying of injuries incurred in service, dying in captivity, or missing.....	172
Schedule 60. Categories of disability for soldiers mutilated or invalidated because of war or other events of service.....	175
Netherlands:	
Schedule 61. Annual pensions to officers and to their widows and children.....	190
Schedule 62. Annual disability and service pensions to noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.....	192
Schedule 63. Annual pensions to widows and children of noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.....	194

Russia:	Page.
Schedule 64. Separation allowances to families of enlisted men.....	197
Schedule 65. Pensions for enlisted men.....	199
Schedule 66. Pensions to widows and other dependents of soldiers or sailors killed in war, dying in consequence of injuries, or missing.....	202
Schedule 67. Military pay table.....	203

## Switzerland:

Schedule 68. Military insurance.....	208
Schedule 69. Civil insurance benefits for accidents.....	211

## DIAGRAMS.

Diagram I. United States Army and Navy. Number of disability pensioners, number of service pensioners, total number of pensioners, 1860-1916.....	22
Diagram II. United States Army and Navy pensions. Expenditure for service pensions and for disability pensions paid to survivors, 1860-1916.....	23
Diagram III. United States Army and Navy pensions. Expenditure for service pensions and for disability pensions paid to widows and other depend- ents, 1860-1916.....	24
Diagram IV. United States Army and Navy pensions. Amount expended for service pensions and for disability pensions, 1860-1916.....	25

## LETTER OF TRANSMITTAL.

---

AUGUST 29, 1917.

SIR: Immediately upon the declaration of war by the United States the Children's Bureau began a study of child welfare in the warring countries based upon such material as could be secured by correspondence or as was available in American libraries. A corps of readers and translators is examining the official records, parliamentary debates, newspaper reports, and current literature available for Great Britain and her colonies, Austria, France, Germany, Italy, Russia, and also for Switzerland and the Netherlands.

Four principal lines of study are pursued: (a) Child labor and school exemptions; (b) infant and maternity care; (c) delinquency; and (d) dependency. The relation of all these questions to the living conditions behind the lines is clear. It is also plain that the living conditions in large measure depend upon the provisions made by the respective governments for soldiers and their dependents. And since the withdrawal of men from the ordinary walks of life to form a large army must create similar problems here, the question of what countries offer important suggestions for a system of soldiers' compensation in this country becomes at once basic to the consideration of child welfare in war time.

It was found that Canada had worked out a system for the care of soldiers and their dependents in a way to be of particular practical interest to the United States. Accordingly it was thought best to make a special study of the care of soldiers and their dependents in Canada, and the bureau was fortunate enough to secure the generous assistance of Mr. (now Capt.) S. Herbert Wolfe, a well-known actuary, of New York City. Capt. Wolfe went to Canada and made the report on the care of dependents of enlisted men in Canada which was submitted to you on May 26 and which, as was then pointed out, embodies elements which have not thus far been brought together in a complete plan, but which, properly developed in a well-considered governmental scheme, seem to offer reasonable means for securing the economic status of the soldier and his family at home.

Upon submission to you of Capt. Wolfe's report on the care of dependents of enlisted men in Canada you at once requested him to direct the preparation of a further pamphlet showing the legal provisions now existing in the United States for the benefit of the mem-

bers of the military forces and their families. This Capt. Wolfe has done, and the result is found in the accompanying report entitled Governmental Provisions in the United States and Foreign Countries for Members of the Military Forces and their Dependents, which includes a review of the pension situation in the United States, a brief analysis of provisions peculiar to foreign countries, and comparative charts of rates in the United States and 12 other countries. In addition the systems of the United States and all the foreign countries except Canada are presented in detail.

The material contained in the accompanying report, together with the report upon the care of dependents of enlisted men in Canada, has been already utilized in drafting a proposed measure for soldiers' compensation in the United States by the Hon. Julian W. Mack, chairman of a special committee appointed by the committee on labor of the Council of National Defense for that purpose.

The bureau desires to express its great obligation to Capt. Wolfe for his invaluable services in planning and directing the report; it is also indebted to the various departments of the Government which have made available much indispensable information. Miss Anna Rochester has been in charge of the report and has had the assistance of Miss Mary D. Hopkins and the following other persons: Miss Marguerite D. Darkow, Miss Lulu L. Eckman, Miss Edith Rockwell Hall, Miss Anna Kalet, Mr. L. Magnusson, Miss Louise Moore, Miss Judith Bernays, Miss Louise F. Brown, and Mrs. Marie Francke Smith.

This report has been prepared under great pressure, and in view of the desire for early publication certain irregularities in the form of tables have been allowed to remain.

Respectfully submitted.

JULIA C. LATHROP, *Chief.*

Hon. WILLIAM B. WILSON,  
*Secretary of Labor.*

## GOVERNMENTAL PROVISIONS IN THE UNITED STATES AND FOREIGN COUNTRIES FOR MEMBERS OF THE MILITARY FORCES AND THEIR DEPENDENTS.

---

### INTRODUCTION.

#### The CHIEF OF THE CHILDREN'S BUREAU.

MADAM: In accordance with the suggestion of Secretary Wilson, made upon the completion of the study of the Care of Dependents of Enlisted Men in Canada, the following compilation has been prepared showing existing provisions for soldiers and their dependents in the United States and the following foreign countries: Australia, Austria, France, Germany, Great Britain, Italy, Netherlands, New Zealand, Russia, South Africa, and Switzerland. The subject is of particular interest at this time, for it will be the part of wisdom to prepare at this date for the conditions which we know will have to be met in the near future. Our present pension laws are confessedly inadequate to meet the situation which has been developed by the present war, and the great interest of our people in this subject is indicated by the large number of relief measures and suggestions which have made their appearance in various parts of the country.

While the general scope of the inquiry was suggested by me, and from time to time I have supervised the preparation of the material, it is but proper to call your attention to the fact that the greater part of the work has been performed by members of the staff of the Children's Bureau, and credit is due to Miss Anna Rochester and her assistants for the preparation of this report.

It was felt that wherever possible an analysis should be made of the historical facts which would supplement the charts and tables. The work of obtaining the material for this report began in connection with a general study of child welfare in belligerent countries which was being made by the Children's Bureau because it was evident that the provision which a country makes or fails to make for the wives and children of its soldiers and sailors during the war is a fundamental influence in children's welfare. To the provisions for separation allowances have been added for the present report the provisions for the widows and children of men killed in battle and the provisions for disabled men. A brief review of the American pension system was then undertaken, but it soon

appeared that the subject justified the detailed treatment here presented. The provisions in foreign countries are presented as they are now so far as it has been possible to secure reliable information. It was felt that the inclusion of additional countries would make this report too cumbersome without enabling us to obtain any information which would be of value in the solution of the problem confronting us. In the tables it has been deemed advisable to show the payments not only in the monetary unit of the several countries but also, in parentheses, the equivalent in dollars and cents. For the purpose of conversion the "Table of values" of foreign countries issued by the Treasury Department has been used. The equivalents are as follows:

Country.	Monetary unit.	Value in United States money.
Austria.....	Krone.....	\$0.2026
France.....	Franc.....	.1930
Germany.....	Mark.....	.2382
Great Britain and colonies.....	Pound sterling.....	4.8665
Italy.....	Lira.....	.1930
Netherlands.....	Florin.....	.4020
Russia.....	Ruble.....	.5146
Switzerland.....	Franc.....	.1930

It was realized of course that the present values are not those given, but for obvious reasons it was deemed advisable to use a rate which was not subject to frequent fluctuation. It is felt, however, that attention must be called to the difference in the purchasing value of money in the various countries, and that factor should be taken into account when attempting to relate the benefits of one country to those of another.

The chapter following the analysis of pensions in the United States which shows the tendencies in foreign pension legislation is not only of historical interest but has a deeper significance in that it crystallizes in concrete form the results of the study of the various problems which have confronted the nations at war in dealing with the care of the soldier and his dependents. While in this country the details must necessarily be changed, we can not escape the basic obligations which other countries have been forced to meet. It raises certain issues for which this country will have to be prepared.

In foreign countries eminent experts in all branches of medicine, philanthropy, and social service have given their best thoughts to the solution of questions which up to this time have had for us only an academic interest. Our entrance into the war will carry with it similar problems, and we must be prepared to find solutions for them. It would be a short-sighted policy for us to disregard the investigations that have been made in other countries and we must not be con-

tent with any form of pension, disability allowances, or relief measures which are not based upon the most advanced and liberal ideas.

In order that the provisions of the various countries on any particular form of benefit might be brought together for comparative purposes, schedules have been prepared (see pp. 28, 31, and 32) which show the different rates awarded for the same contingencies in the different localities; it must be remembered, however, that a comparative schedule of this kind can deal with only one phase of a subject which has many modifications and that limitations must constantly be borne in mind lest an incorrect idea of the subject be obtained.

It is but proper that I should direct your attention to the great assistance which has been afforded the investigators not only by the various departments of our own Government but by the representatives of certain foreign governments. Invaluable aid was given by the officials of the Pension Bureau and of the Library of Congress, who spared no effort to assist in the location of the necessary material. To all of these sources are due most earnest thanks, and without their assistance it is safe to say that this investigation would have lacked much of its completeness.

S. HERBERT WOLFE.



## PENSIONS IN THE UNITED STATES.

Three types of provisions are made for men who have served in the Army or Navy of the United States and for their dependents:

A. The retirement systems of the Army, Navy, Marine Corps, and Coast Guard provide with certain marked limitations for officers and men of the Regular Establishment. Except in the Coast Guard no allowance is made for an enlisted man who has served less than 30 years. No allowance for widows and children of either officers or enlisted men who are killed in the service is made beyond a death gratuity. This is usually equivalent to six months' pay of the deceased, although it rises to one year's pay if he has died in aviation service and to two years' pay for the widow of an officer or man in the Coast Guard.

B. The general pension laws administered by the Pension Bureau of the Department of the Interior provide for military and naval officers disabled in the Federal service who are not part of the Regular Establishment and therefore not eligible for retirement, for enlisted men who are disabled in the Federal service, and for the widows and children and certain other dependents of officers and enlisted men who are killed in the Federal service, except that widows of officers and enlisted men in the Coast Guard are not eligible for pension.

C. Service pension laws, also administered by the Pension Bureau, provide for men who have served in specified wars for specific periods, and for their widows and children, without reference to any disability incurred in the service or to the cause of the death. These include the War of 1812, the War with Mexico, various Indian wars, and the Civil War, and the required length of service varies in the different laws from participation in a single battle to service of 90 days or more. Women nurses who served in the Civil War are eligible to pensions after six months' service.

### A. ARMY AND NAVY RETIREMENT.

Officers and enlisted men of the Regular Establishment are retired with three-fourths of their active pay. Members of the Officers' Reserve Corps and of the federalized National Guard are not eligible to retirement. Enlisted men, including noncommissioned officers in the Army and Marine Corps and petty officers in the Navy, are eligible to retirement only after 30 years of service. In the Coast Guard enlisted men who have served less than 30 years may be retired for disability in the service.

Officers, on the other hand, in any branch of the Regular Establishment may be retired for physical disability incident to duty without regard to the length of their service. They may, at the discretion of certain authorities, be placed on the retired list because of physical disability not traceable to the service, but for such disability they are usually "wholly retired" with one year's pay.

Physicians and enlisted members of the Medical Corps of the Regular Army are on the same basis as officers and enlisted men, respectively, of the Regular Army. The physician is eligible to retirement in case of disability incurred in the line of duty. The enlisted man can be retired only after 30 years of service; for disability incurred in line of duty before that time he may receive a pension.

Retirement pay depends solely upon the active pay the officer or enlisted man was receiving, and it does not vary according to the nature and extent of the disability. For the Army officer who is retired in good health upon his own application after 30 years of service, the officer who is automatically retired at 64 years of age, and the officer who is so seriously disabled in battle that for the remainder of his life he requires the constant care of an attendant, the retirement pay is reckoned on identically the same basis, with one exception: For the Army officer below the rank of brigadier general who is disabled in battle the retired pay is increased slightly as years go by, on the basis of the increases for length of active service which are allowed to his rank.

The death gratuity to the widow or other person designated by the officer or enlisted man of the Army, Navy, or Marine Corps, is granted only on behalf of a man who dies while on the active list. No gratuity is paid to the widow or heirs of either an officer or an enlisted man upon the retired list. The usual gratuity amounts to six months' pay of the deceased, but this is doubled if the death is due to an aviation accident in line of duty.

In the Coast Guard the death gratuity is paid to the widow, or to the child or children under 16 years of age, or to the dependent mother of the deceased. It is granted not only if he has died in active service but if his death is the result of wound, injury, or disease incurred in the service. The gratuity amounts to full pay for two years from the date of death.

No officer or enlisted man who is on the active or the retired list is eligible for a pension. But the widow or other person who receives a death gratuity is not deprived of right to a pension if she is otherwise eligible. It should be noted that the members of the Coast Guard and their widows are in no case eligible to a pension.

Two apparent exceptions to this general rule that persons receiving retirement pay are not eligible to a pension are found in the

following provisions for enlisted men, which are administered by the Army or the Navy although the actual payment is made through the Pension Bureau. Any man who has seen war service in the Army, Navy, or Marine Corps and has been awarded a medal of honor for distinguished gallantry in the face of the enemy receives, when he attains the age of 65 years, \$10 monthly for the remainder of his life in addition to any other pay or pension.

The second exception applies to enlisted men in the Navy or Marine Corps and allows to a man who has served 20 years and is disabled for sea service an amount equal to one-half the pay of his rating at the time of his discharge. The man who has served 10 years may receive a "suitable amount" up to a maximum of \$8 monthly, with the further limitation that if he is also receiving a pension his allowance may not exceed one-fourth the amount of his pension. Both the 10-year man and the 20-year man receive a double allowance if the disability was incident to aviation duty.<sup>1</sup>

#### B. GENERAL PENSION LAWS.

The principle that some compensation was due from the Government for disability or death had been established by legislation long before the outbreak of the Civil War. In general, in 1860, the man totally disabled in service and the widow and children of the man dying as a result of service were entitled for life to one-half of the pay the man was receiving at the time of his injury or death; the minimum rate for total disability was fixed at \$8 a month and the maximum rate for disabled men and for widows was half the pay of the lieutenant colonel. The man who was slightly disabled received a pension at a lower rate according to the extent of his disability.

In 1862 the minimum for a widow was raised to \$8 and the maximum for a widow or a totally disabled man was reduced to \$30 monthly. Four years later a supplementary allowance of \$2 monthly was granted to the widow for each child under 16 years of age. The widow's scale was again amended in 1886 by raising the minimum to \$12 monthly. For the disabled man a pension based not on the pay of his rank but on the nature of his disability was first provided in 1864, when he was allowed \$25 monthly for the loss of both hands or the sight of both eyes, and \$20 monthly for the loss of both feet. The list of disabilities for which pension rates were specified was soon extended and practically reached its present form in 1872. The rates have been greatly increased, however, since that time. (See Appendixes B and I.)

During the fiscal year ended June 30, 1860, there were on the pension roll 11,284 persons and the expenditure for pensions was a

<sup>1</sup> For further details of Army and Navy retirement systems see Appendixes E and F.

little over a million dollars. In 1865, the number of pensioners under the general law had jumped to 85,986 and the annual expenditure to \$8,500,000. The number of persons receiving pensions because of disability or death in the service reached its maximum in 1891, with 530,174 persons on the rolls and an annual expenditure of over \$104,000,000. Since that time the decrease in number of pensioners and in annual disbursements for disability or death in the service has been continuous, although during the year ended June 30, 1916, there were still more than 140,000 persons on this roll and the disbursements amounted to \$30,700,000. The total expenditure for these pensions from 1860 to 1916 has amounted to almost two and three-fourths billion dollars (\$2,735,635,725.89). The disbursements to disabled survivors have been more than double those to widows and other dependents, 70 per cent of the total amount having been paid to survivors and 30 per cent to widows and others. It is only since 1878, however, that the annual disbursements to disabled survivors have been greater than those to the dependents of men killed in the service. Year by year from 1864 to 1874, inclusive, the number of dependents on the roll was greater than the number of disabled survivors. And from 1860 to 1877, inclusive, the annual disbursements to dependents were greater than those to survivors. (See Appendix L.)

#### DISABILITY PENSIONS.

Any man disabled in the military or naval service of the United States who is not eligible for retirement pay is entitled to receive, upon application, a pension for disability varying in amount from \$6 to \$100 monthly.<sup>1</sup> For certain permanent specific disabilities the amount is fixed by law, and the award is made for life. The maximum rate of \$100 is granted for total blindness or the loss of both hands or both feet. Curiously enough, "disability requiring regular aid and attendance" is awarded a lower rate—\$72 monthly. "Incapacity to perform manual labor" is rated at \$30. The lowest rate for a specific disability fixed by law is the \$24 monthly granted for "disability equivalent to the loss of a hand or a foot."

SCHEDULE 1.—*United States. Monthly pension rates fixed by law for permanent specific disabilities.*

- \$100.00. Loss of both hands.
- Loss of both feet.
- Loss of sight of both eyes.
- Loss of sight of one eye, the sight of the other having been lost before enlistment.

<sup>1</sup> Physicians who are serving as a part of the Medical Corps in the new Army but who have not been part of the Medical Corps of the Regular Army are eligible, not for retirement, but for pension, in case of disability incurred in the service. The same is true of drivers and other men who enlist for service in the United States Army Ambulance Corps. Female nurses, on the other hand, of the female nurse corps of the Army or Navy are employed and not enlisted and have no pensionable status. Members of the Red Cross units—physicians, drivers, nurses, or others—although they are under Army orders, have no Army status, and therefore no pensionable status.

- \$72.00. Disability requiring regular aid and attendance.
- \$60.00. Loss of one hand and one foot.
  - Total disability in one hand and one foot.
- \$55.00. Loss of either a leg at the hip joint or an arm at the shoulder joint, or so near as to prevent the use of an artificial limb.
- \$50.00. Disability requiring frequent and periodical but not constant aid and attendance.
- \$46.00. Loss of an arm at or above the elbow or a leg at or above the knee.
  - Total disability in arm or leg.
- \$40.00. Loss of hand or foot.
  - Total disability in one hand or one foot.
  - Total deafness.
- \$31.25. Total disability in both hands or both feet.
- \$30.00. Incapacity to perform manual labor.
- \$24.00. Disability equivalent to the loss of a hand or a foot.

For minor disabilities rates are scheduled by administrative ruling, and these vary from \$2 to \$27. However, the law provides that the monthly pension may not be less than \$6, and when a disability rated at \$2 or \$4 monthly occurs alone the pensioner receives the \$6 minimum. (See Appendix C.) For disabilities which are not permanent the pensioner is subject to periodical examination, and the pension may be renewed at a different rate or withdrawn.

With the slight exception noted below, the amount of a disability pension is the same for all without regard to rank, length of service, or the number of the disabled man's dependents. For minor disabilities rated at \$8 or less in the disability schedule, the allowance is graded according to rank up to a \$30 maximum. (See Appendix D.) It will be remembered, however, that officers in the Regular Establishment are provided for through the retirement systems, and are not eligible to a pension while receiving retired pay.

#### PENSIONS FOR DEPENDENTS.

The widow of a man killed in the service or dying as the result of injury or disease in the service is eligible to a pension varying from \$12 to \$30 monthly according to her husband's rank. For each legitimate child of the deceased who is under 16 years of age the widow receives, regardless of the rank of the soldier, a supplementary allowance of \$2 monthly. Marriage subsequent to the close of a man's military or naval service does not entitle the widow to a pension under the general law unless she has lived with the deceased continuously from the date of marriage to the date of his death.

The widow's pension is payable until her death or remarriage, when it reverts to the children or ceases altogether. If the widow has remarried and has again become a widow, she is again entitled to pension provided she is then without means of support and was the wife of the man on whose behalf she claims pension during the time of his active service in any war. The law makes the further

proviso that if in the meantime the pension has been paid to the children and they are still of pensionable age or condition it shall return to the widow only if the children are in her care.

If there is no pensionable widow, the amount of the widow's pension may be paid to the legitimate children under 16 years of age, together with the supplementary allowance of \$2 monthly. (A child born before the marriage of its parents is deemed legitimate if it has been acknowledged by the father.) The pension for one motherless child is from \$14 to \$32, according to the rank of the father, and for five motherless children from \$22 to \$40. No child over 16 years of age is entitled to a pension unless he is insane, idiotic, or otherwise mentally or physically helpless; and an older helpless child may not be pensioned unless he was under 16 years of age at the time of the father's death.

For the children and the widow who has not remarried the fact of the relationship entitles to a pension without regard to their economic status. The parents or the brothers and sisters of the deceased, on the other hand, must prove that they are "without other present means of support than their own manual labor or the contributions of others not legally bound for their support." And in no case are they eligible to a pension if there is a pensionable widow or child. The monthly amount, \$12 to \$30, according to the rank of the deceased, is payable to the mother, or the father, or to orphan brothers and sisters under 16 years of age.<sup>1</sup>

#### C. SERVICE PENSIONS.

Service pensions had been granted before 1860 to men who had served at least six months or until the close of the Revolutionary War and to their widows and children. In 1862 a law was passed practically excluding new claims for pensions under these old laws.

The first pension for service in any other war, granted without reference to disability or death incurred in the service, was granted in 1871. This applied only to the War of 1812. The first Mexican War service pension was enacted in 1887 and the first Civil War service pension in 1890.

Since 1890 the monthly rates for service pensions have been repeatedly raised. They are not, however, uniform for the various wars. For example, pensions to Civil War veterans under the most recent act affecting them (May 11, 1912) range from \$13 to \$30, according to age and length of service. (See Appendix H.) Pensions to men who participated in the Indian wars are fixed at \$20 monthly. Pensions to widows without children under 16 years of age range from \$12 to \$20 monthly. Children under 16 years of age of men who served at

<sup>1</sup> For further details as to pensions to disabled men and to dependents under the general law see Appendixes A to D.

least 90 days in the Civil War are eligible to pension, but no children are provided for under service acts relating to other wars. The rate for each child of a pensioned mother is \$2 monthly; a family of motherless children receives \$12 monthly plus the \$2 extra for each individual child. As with pensions under the general law, a "helpless" child over 16 is pensionable provided he was under 16 years of age at the time of his father's death. Dependents other than widow and children are not eligible to service pensions.

Not only have the rates of the Civil War service pensions been raised since 1890, but the limitations concerning disability or dependency have been relaxed. At first a man was eligible to a pension only if he were incapacitated for manual labor, although his disability need bear no relation whatever to his Civil War service, and a widow must have been without means of support other than her own daily labor. Now, however, age without disability entitles a man to a Civil War service pension, and any widow who was married before June 27, 1905, to a man who had served 90 days in the Civil War is entitled to pension without regard to dependency.<sup>1</sup>

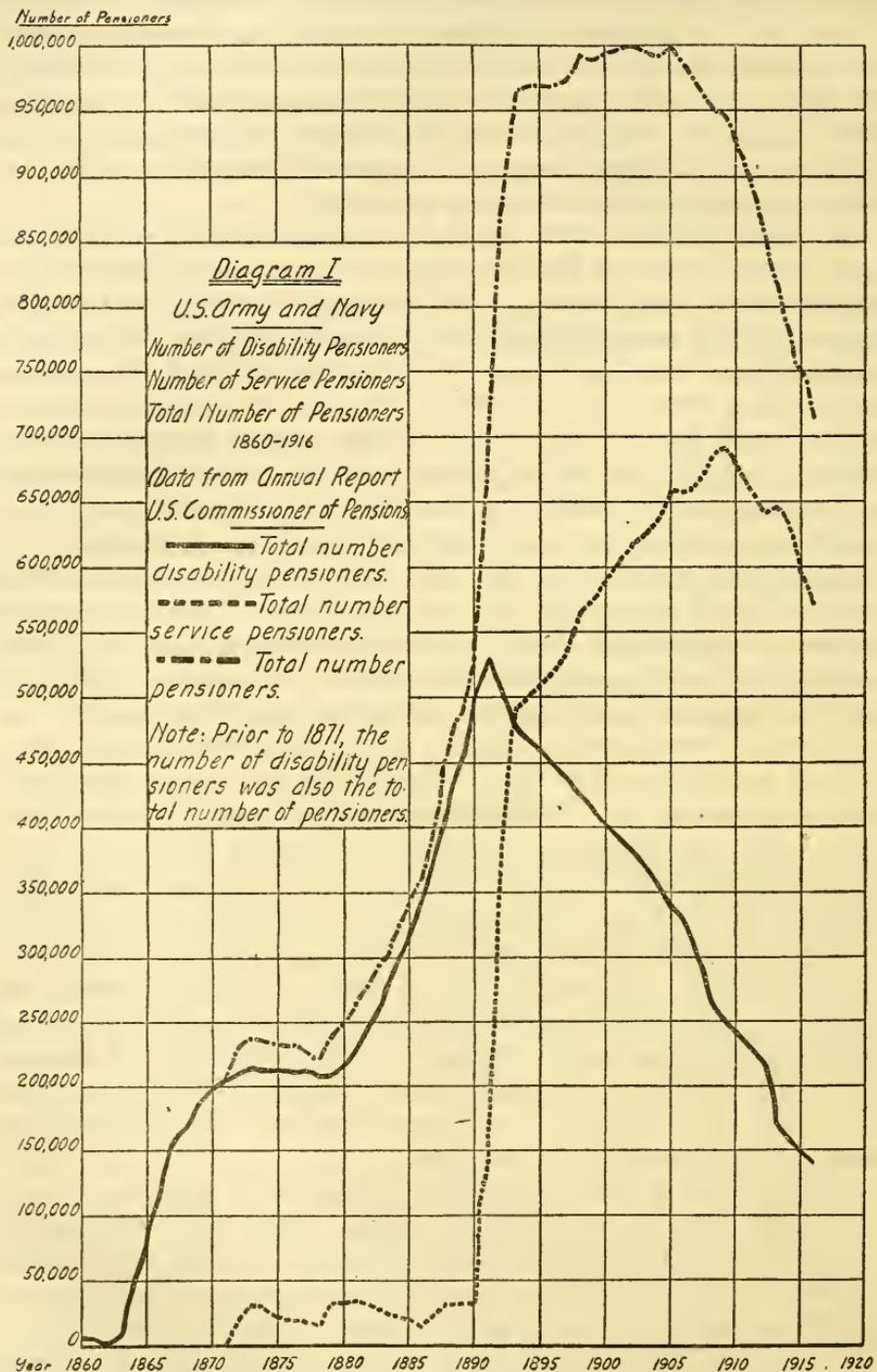
The service pensions for the War of 1812 and the Mexican War had little effect upon either the amounts paid to pensioners or the number of beneficiaries. The Civil War service pension act (1890), on the other hand, raised the total number of pensioners under all laws from approximately 540,000 in 1890 to 965,000 in 1893.

The rates for the service pension at that time ranged from \$6 to \$12 and were higher than those awarded for very minor disabilities under the general law. It would appear that many pensioners may have applied for transfer to the service pension roll since the total number of pensioners under all laws continued to increase until 1902, although the number of pensioners under the general law declined steadily and rapidly after 1891, and this rapid decline could hardly be accounted for by the number of deaths occurring among the pensioners. Furthermore, the total number of pensioners, after remaining fairly constant for three years after 1902, began to decrease rapidly after 1905, while the decrease in the number of service pensioners did not begin until four years later and was checked temporarily by the passing of a new law in 1912.

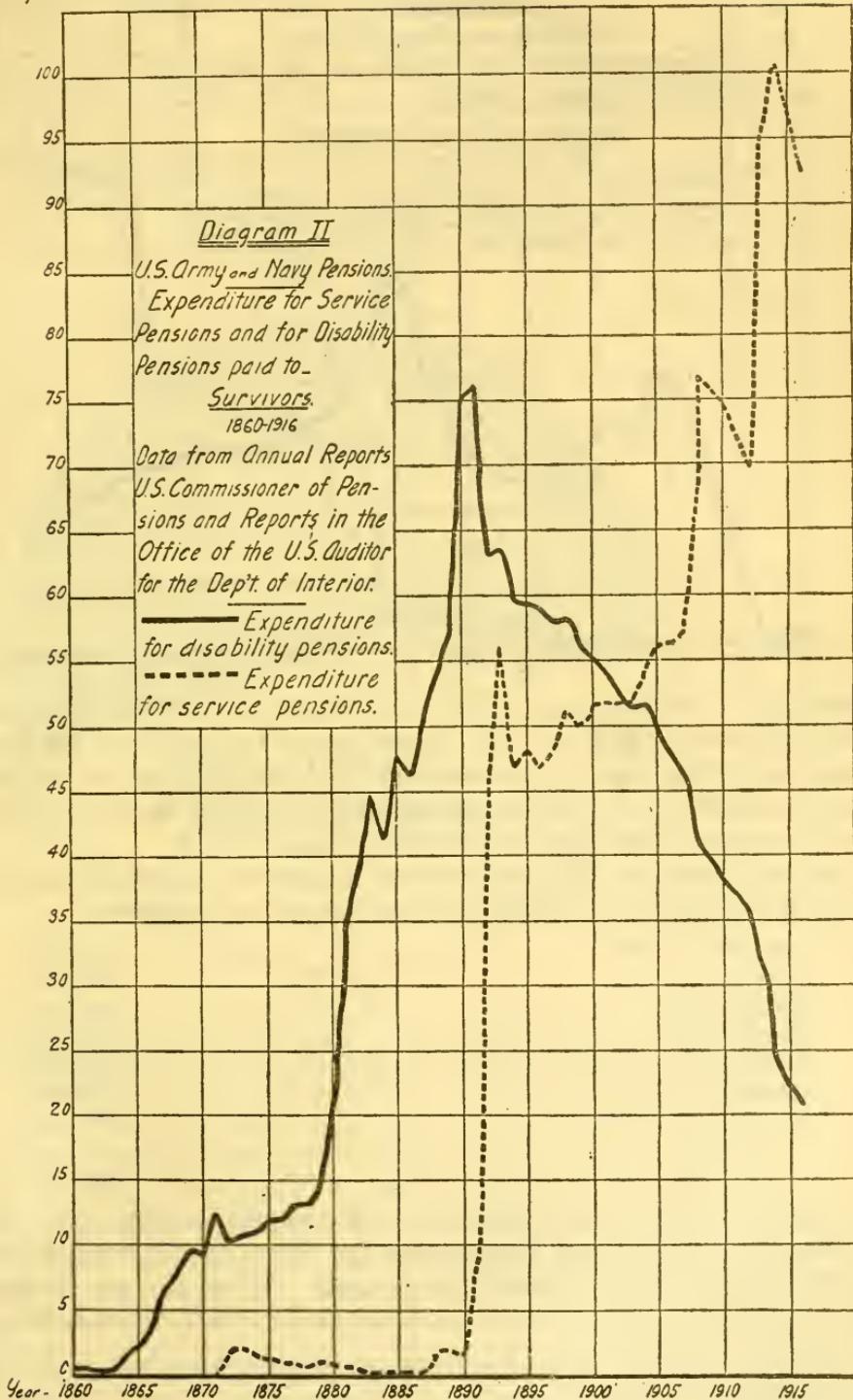
The difference between the maximum number of pensioners under the general law and the maximum number under the service acts is noteworthy: 530,000 persons received pensions in 1891 for death or disability incurred in the service; 693,000 persons received pensions in 1909 for service without regard to cause of death or disability.

The effect of the service pension legislation upon pension expenditure has been striking. The total amount paid in pensions from 1860 to 1916 is nearly five billion dollars (\$4,946,792,242.90), and more than

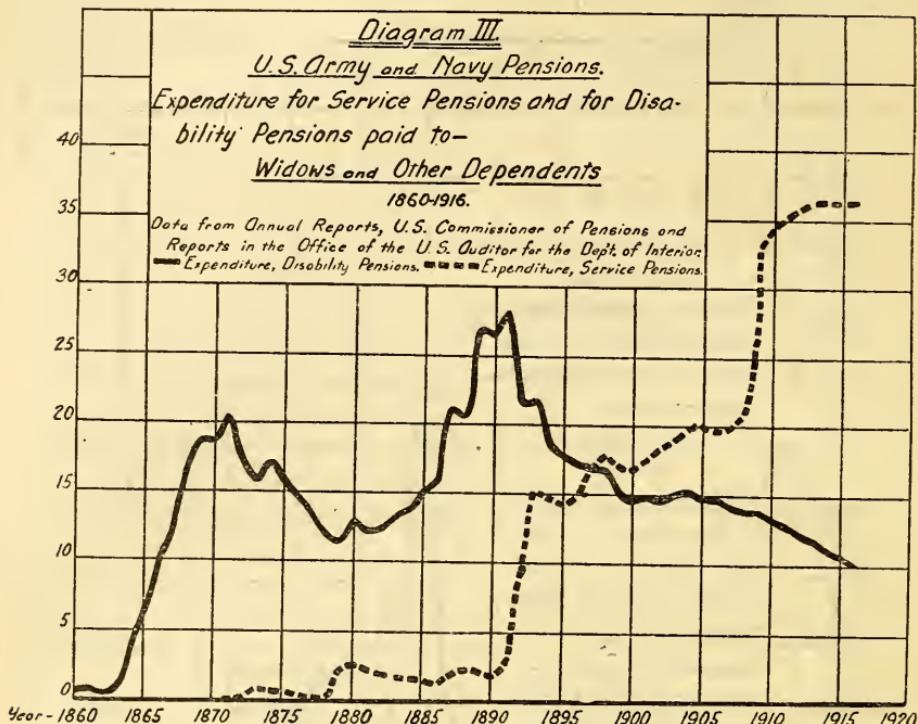
<sup>1</sup> For further details of service pension provisions see Appendixes G, H, and J.



Expenditure for Pensions  
by Millions of Dollars.



Expenditure for Pensions  
by Millions of Dollars.



two-fifths of this amount, 44.7 per cent (\$2,211,156,517.01),<sup>1</sup> has been paid for service pensions. The largest annual expenditure for pensions under the general law was the \$104,500,000 paid to 530,000 persons in 1891. The largest annual expenditure for service pensions was the \$136,800,000 paid to 627,000 persons in 1914.

In this connection the total number of soldiers and sailors engaged in all the previous wars of the United States is of interest:<sup>2</sup>

Revolutionary War.....	184,038
War of 1812.....	286,730
Mexican War.....	78,718
Indian wars.....	83,993
Civil War.....	2,213,365
Spanish War.....	312,000
Philippines and China.....	146,151
 Total.....	 3,304,995

Payments under the service acts were negligible until after the passing of the first Civil War service act, when they increased from \$1,766,874 in 1890 to \$56,133,570 in 1893. When the service pensions were increased for the older pensioners in 1907, the number of

<sup>1</sup> Diagram IV includes in the amount shown for disability pensions arrears for the years 1886-1890. See Appendix L.

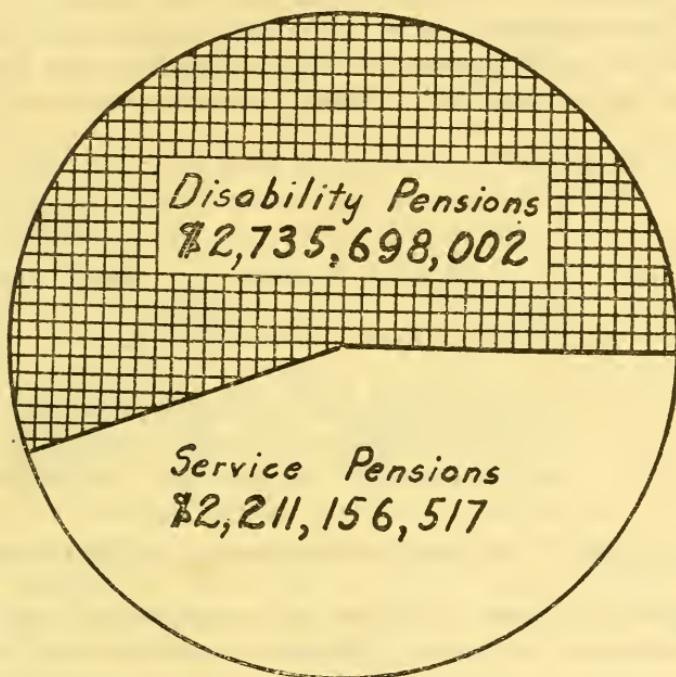
<sup>2</sup> From annual report of the Commissioner of Pensions, 1905, pp. 520, 579.

## Diagram IV

### U.S. Army and Navy Pensions.

*Amount Expended for Service Pensions  
and for Disability Pensions*

*1860-1916*



pensioned survivors rose slightly and the annual expenditure, to survivors only, rose from \$57,000,000 in 1907 to \$76,500,000 in 1908. Again, in 1912, the rate was increased and annual expenditure to survivors rose from \$69,500,000 in 1912 to \$94,500,000 in 1913.

In the same way the number of widows on the service-pension roll increased a little more rapidly after the change in the widows' law in 1908 and the annual expenditure for service pensions to widows rose from \$21,000,000 in 1908 to \$32,750,000 in 1909. (See Appendix L.)

The total expenditure for pensions has been so great that the millions of dollars appropriated by special acts on behalf of individuals are a small percentage of the total. An analysis of the annual reports of the Commissioner of Pensions shows that from

1861 to 1901, inclusive,<sup>1</sup> the number of new pensioners added year by year plus the number of pensioners receiving an increased amount was 2,837,455 under the public acts and 8,172 under the special acts. Since 1901, however, there has been a marked increase in the amount of special pension legislation, so that the total number of persons affected by special acts from 1861 to 1915, inclusive, had risen to 45,217. Most of the special legislation is concerned with granting a special rate to pensioners already on the rolls under the public laws. Since 1901, for example, seven-eighths of the special acts have granted increases and only one-eighth have added new pensioners to the roll.

The part played by pensioners under special acts during the last six years appears more clearly from the following comparison compiled from the annual reports of the Commissioner of Pensions. (Similar data are not readily available for the earlier periods.)

SCHEDULE 2.—*Pensions under public and special laws, 1911 to 1916.*

Year ended June 30—	Pensions under public laws.			Pensions under special laws.		
	Number of pensioners.	Annual value of pensions.		Number of pensioners.	Annual value of pensions.	
		Total.	Average.		Total.	Average.
1911	869,775	\$148,222,880.80	\$170.40	22,323	\$6,611,357.00	\$296.17
1912	838,210	144,973,569.40	172.96	22,084	6,584,572.00	298.12
1913	798,184	164,791,688.82	206.46	22,016	6,699,096.00	304.28
1914	765,559	169,504,849.26	209.66	19,680	5,944,484.00	302.05
1915	726,499	154,531,719.78	212.71	21,648	6,640,722.00	306.76
1916	688,913	147,473,711.26	214.07	20,659	6,235,218.00	301.82

### TENDENCIES IN FOREIGN PENSION LEGISLATION.

A comparison of these American laws with the provisions for soldiers' dependents in certain European countries and British dominions<sup>2</sup> reveals various tendencies or types of provision with which American laws have not hitherto been concerned.

Possibly the most striking difference from American laws is the almost universal provision for separation allowances paid to the families of men on active service. In Great Britain and the British colonies and in Russia an allowance is paid to the wife and children of every enlisted man;<sup>3</sup> in many cases this varies according to the size of the family. Elsewhere such an allowance is granted only in case of need or, as in Holland, the amount is graded not by the size of the family but by its economic status. In addition, Great Britain

<sup>1</sup> July 1, 1861, to June 30, 1901.

<sup>2</sup> The following countries have been studied and their provisions are presented in the later sections of this report: Australia, Austria, France, Germany, Great Britain, Italy, Netherlands, New Zealand, Russia, South Africa, Switzerland. The Canadian system is presented in a separate report published by the Children's Bureau under the title "Care of Dependents of Enlisted Men in Canada."

<sup>3</sup> Except, apparently, Russians who are serving their required term.

and the British colonies<sup>1</sup> require allotment to the wife of part of the pay of the enlisted man. Alone among the belligerent countries studied the United States is making no allowance whatever for the families of men in active service;<sup>2</sup> the United States permits but does not require an allotment of pay.

The amounts of the separation allowances vary widely. In Germany, for example, the stated allowance is frankly a minimum, which may be increased for each community at the discretion of the local distributive agencies. In fact, it is frequently supplemented from State or municipal funds. Germany also grades the amount of the income which a family may possess without forfeiting separation allowance according to the type of community in which the family lives. Russia gives the cash equivalent of specified food staples and their cash value is determined for each Province separately. Practically every country has increased the amount of its allowances since the outbreak of the war. Where the present amounts seem small when measured by American standards of living, it is only fair to remember that a smaller monetary unit goes relatively further than its equivalent in American currency.

Both France and Germany have since the war extended to all wives who are receiving separation allowances the maternity benefits already provided in the German system of social insurance and in the French maternity benefit law of 1913. In Great Britain a new provision of the national insurance act requires that every man who joins the Army or Navy be insured and his premiums deducted from his pay. His wife then becomes eligible for a maternity benefit of 30 shillings (\$7.30) for each confinement. In other ways also new efforts are everywhere evident to adapt the allowances and pensions to the actual needs of the situation. For example, the illegitimate child who has been acknowledged by the father is now almost everywhere entitled to benefits, and Great Britain gives the unmarried wife a separation allowance in certain circumstances, provided the man chooses to allot his pay to her. In Germany the unmarried woman is entitled to a maternity benefit if she has already an illegitimate child on whose behalf she is drawing an allowance.

---

<sup>1</sup> South Africa, no data on this point except for British Army reservists.

<sup>2</sup> The United States appropriated in 1916 the sum of \$6,250,000 for the care of families dependent upon enlisted men in the National Guard during their service on the Mexican border. The allowance varied according to the amounts the soldiers had been contributing to their families up to a maximum of \$50 monthly. (39 Stat. L., 649, 859.)

SCHEDULE 3.—Comparative schedule of military pay of enlisted men (lowest rank) and of separation allowances to their dependents.

Monthly rate in American currency in—									
Recipients of pay or separation allowances.	United States.	Austria.	France.	Germany.	Nov.-April.	Great Britain. <sup>1</sup>	Colonies of Great Britain.		
						Soldier.	Aus-tralia, <sup>2</sup>	Canada, <sup>3</sup>	New Zealand, <sup>4</sup>
Enlisted man (lowest rank) <sup>5</sup> .....	\$33.00	\$0.97	\$1.45	\$3.78	\$3.78	\$7.30	\$9.12	\$33.00	\$7.30
Wife and children:									
Wife.....		7.20	3.57	4.76	9.49	6.32	10.44	20.00	9.84
Wife and 1 child.....		11.55	5.36	7.14	16.86	12.65	13.22	20.00	15.11
Wife and 2 children.....		15.90	7.15	9.52	22.13	17.31	15.99	20.00	18.80
Wife and 3 children.....		20.25	8.94	11.90	25.82	21.08	18.77	20.00	21.91
Wife and 4 children.....		24.60	10.73	14.28	28.99	23.19	21.64	20.00	23.01
Each subsequent child.....		4.35	1.79	2.38	3.16	2.11	10.277	.....	2.11
Motherless children:									
1 child.....		12.70	1.79	2.38	7.38	7.38	2.77	20.00	5.27
2 children.....		11.55	3.58	4.76	13.70	13.70	5.55	20.00	10.54
3 children.....		15.90	5.37	7.14	20.10	20.10	8.32	20.00	11.06
4 children.....		20.25	7.16	9.52	26.39	26.39	11.10	20.00	15.81
Each subsequent child.....		4.35	1.79	2.38	6.32	6.32	2.77	.....	5.37
Other dependents:									
1 parent.....		12.45	1.79	2.38	.....	.....	.....	18.20.00	.....
2 parents.....		8.70	3.58	4.76	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
1 brother or sister.....		4.35	1.79	2.38	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Each subsequent brother or sister.....		4.35	1.79	2.38	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....

<sup>1</sup> All children under 14. Different rates if one child is 14 or over.<sup>2</sup> Imperial forces only. British Army reservists receive pay of British Army; families receive allowance on a slightly higher scale than imperial forces.<sup>3</sup> Expeditionary force only. British Army reservists receive pay of British Army; their families, an allowance graded by size of family: Wife only, \$11.66; wife and 4 children, \$25.78.<sup>4</sup> British Army reservists only. Pay of colonial contingent, \$36.50; information about allowances not available.<sup>5</sup> British Army reservists only. Information as to colonial contingent not available.<sup>6</sup> The amounts stated are fixed for capitals of provinces or districts. The rates in other communes are slightly lower.<sup>7</sup> Families of wage earners in militia or in actual service in first or second reserve. Information as to present pay of enlisted men is not available.<sup>8</sup> In some countries part of soldier's pay must be allotted to the family.<sup>9</sup> Peace service rate.<sup>10</sup> Only fifth and sixth child; seventh and subsequent receive no allowance.<sup>11</sup> Each dependent 8 years of age and over, cash equivalent of 42/100 of a kilogram of beef (according to laws of 1912 and 1873); each child under 8 years, one-half of this amount.<sup>12</sup> If soldier's parent is head of family, he or she receives \$7.20 instead of \$4.35; each additional dependent receives \$1.35.<sup>13</sup> Amount varies; maximum is \$24.12.

<sup>14</sup> Cash equivalent of 61.2 pounds flour, 9 pounds grits, 3.6 pounds salt, nine-tenths of 1 pound vegetable oil for each dependent; child under 5 years old receives one-half these amounts. Allowances apparently not granted to families of soldiers serving their required term.

<sup>15</sup> First dependent, maximum, \$8.40; second, \$5.27; third, \$3.68; fourth and subsequent, \$2.11 each.

<sup>16</sup> First dependent, maximum \$6.32; each subsequent, rates vary from first, \$1.22 to fourth, \$1.06.

<sup>17</sup> Other dependents include mother, married sister if she is a widow, and invalid father if he is a widower, who receive at wife's rate; brothers and sisters under 16 and children of dependent widowed sister, who receive at children's rate. Total of allowances for all dependents must not exceed \$29.20.

<sup>18</sup> Mother only, if indolent or deserted, or husband entirely incapacitated for work, and if soldier is sole support and no allowance is paid to wife or child.

England has recently provided that special allowances may be paid to enable men to meet financial obligations contracted before they entered the service for the following purposes: To buy furniture or real property, to pay rents or taxes, to meet payments on loans or mortgages, or to pay for children's schooling. The need for financial assistance must be proved and the amount paid by the State can not exceed £104 (\$506.12) per annum.

Several countries permit the pension for a partially disabled man or for the widow of a man killed in service to be commuted into a lump-sum payment, provided the pensioner can satisfy the authorities that this will better serve his needs. Great Britain, again, and certain of the colonies, make substantial variations in the pensions allowed for total disability according to the number of the man's dependents.

Practically all countries vary their disability pensions and pensions to widows and other dependents of men killed in service according to the military rank of the man. Switzerland, on the other hand, has related her military compensation to her civil insurance scheme and bases the allowances for disability and death on the man's civil earnings up to specified maxima. England allows a disabled man or a widow to receive, under certain conditions, a pension based not on disability but on prewar income. If the enlisted man can prove, for example, that the disability pension, including the additional allowance for children, and his present average earnings amount to less than his prewar earnings, he may be granted a pension which, together with his average earnings, will equal but not exceed his prewar earnings up to a maximum of 50 shillings (\$12.17) a week, and half of any prewar earnings between 50 and 100 shillings (\$12.17 and \$24.33) a week.

The new pension law in Italy and the proposed law in France include detailed categories of injuries which aim to measure the extent of disability not in terms of military usefulness but in terms of civil usefulness and earning power. Fine adjustments of the relation of the injury to the individual's occupation have not been attempted, even in Germany. And nowhere are the pensions granted to a disabled man lowered or withdrawn if he is able to increase his earning power by special training.

Various methods have been devised to provide for a disabled man and his dependents during his reeducation. In Canada the disabled man can be reenlisted for industrial training, and during the period of training his family receives allotted pay and separation allowances. Great Britain and Italy enforce plans for reeducation by withholding their part of the pension from a man who refuses to undergo treatment or training certified as necessary for his interest.

SCHEDULE 4.—Comparative schedule of pensions to disabled enlisted men (lowest rank) and their dependents.

Beneficiaries.	Monthly rate in American currency of pension payable to several classes of beneficiaries in—										Colonies of Great Britain.				
	Austria.		Germany.		Bonuses added to pension.	Great Britain.	Australia.	Canada.	New Zealand.	South Africa.	Italy.	Netherlands.	Russia.	Switzer-land.	
United States.	Soldier.	Sailor.	France.	Disability pension.											
Enlisted man (lowest grade) whose disability is equal to— 100 per cent, with constant need of attendance.....	\$72.00	\$6.08	\$6.28	\$19.30	\$10.72	Mutilation bonus ranging from 12.86 to 6.43 and war bonus, \$3.57	\$50.07	\$42.16	\$60.84	\$47.43	\$40.55	\$25.09	\$12.06	\$9.26	
out constant need of attendance .....	100.00	6.08	6.28	19.30	10.72		28.99	31.62	40.00	36.89	40.55	20.27	22.68 to 8.04	7.20	270% to 8.94
Wife of disabled man..... Each child of disabled man whose disability is equal to 100 per cent.....							15.81	15.81	13.18	13.18	13.18	13.18			
							5.27 to 2.64	10.54 to 5.27	6.00	7.91	7.91	7.91			

<sup>1</sup> Granted only to unmarried man, in case of indigence; otherwise no increase for need of attendance.<sup>2</sup> Percentage of civil earnings.<sup>3</sup> Special allowance payable until 6 months after close of the present war. A supplementary allowance varying from \$3.04 to \$1.01 monthly is also granted to disabled men until 6 months after close of present war.

SCHEDULE 5.—Comparative schedule of pensions to dependents of enlisted men (lowest rank) killed in battle.

Beneficiaries.	United States.	Austria.	France.	Germany.	Colonies of Great Britain.				Italy.	Nether-lands.	Russia.	Switzer-land. <sup>1</sup>
					Normal.	Excep-tional.	Aus-tralia.	Canada.				
Widow and children:												
Widow	\$12.00	\$2.84	\$6.03	\$9.06	\$7.94	\$14.49	\$21.08	\$32.00	\$26.35	\$10.13	\$4.02	\$2.06
Widow and 1 child	14.00	3.65	6.03	9.06	11.27	19.76	31.62	38.00	34.26	31.84	5.63	3.00
Widow and 2 children	16.00	4.46	6.03	9.06	14.61	24.15	39.53	44.00	42.16	41.37	6.23	4.12
Widow and 3 children	18.00	5.27	6.03	9.06	17.93	27.67	44.80	50.00	50.07	47.84	6.83	5.15
Widow and 4 children	20.00	6.08	6.03	9.06	21.26	30.31	50.07	56.00	57.98	54.31	11.74	6.18
Each subsequent child	2.00	.....	.....	.....	3.33	2.64	5.27	6.00	7.91	6.47	.80	1.03
Moierless children:												
1 child	14.00	1.22	6.03	9.06	4.76	7.38	15.84 to 10.55.	12.00	10.54	6.47	10.13	2.01
2 children	16.00	2.44	6.03	9.06	9.52	13.70	31.68 to 21.10.	24.00	21.08	12.94	10.13	3.02
Each subsequent child	2.00	4.122	.....	.....	4.76	6.32	15.84 to 10.55.	12.00	10.54	6.47	.80	1.01
Other dependents:												
Mother alone	12.00	.....	.....	.....	15.81	Each	24.00	Maximum, \$26.35, if no wife or children;	20.24	10.13	.....	20
Father alone	12.00	.....	.....	.....	15.81	.....	24.00	.....	20.24	10.13	.....	35
Father and mother	12.00	.....	.....	.....	15.81	.....	24.00	.....	20.24	.....	.....	15
Grandmother					.....	.....	.....	\$19.76, if there are children or wife,	.....	.....	.....	15
Granddaughter					.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	25
Grandmother and grandfather					.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	10 15
Each brother or sister					.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....

<sup>1</sup> Percentage of civil earnings.<sup>2</sup> For needy, emergency aid granted. See Schedule 14, p. 202.<sup>3</sup> Fifth child only.<sup>4</sup> Rate for largest cities; slightly lower rate elsewhere. See Schedule 66, p. 202.<sup>5</sup> Sisters only.<sup>6</sup> Collective maximum, 25 per cent.<sup>6</sup> Third child only.<sup>7</sup> For needy, emergency aid granted. See Schedule 14, p. 61.<sup>8</sup> Total for all brothers and sisters.<sup>9</sup> Sisters only.<sup>10</sup> Collective maximum, 25 per cent.

The ages up to which children are eligible to pensions or separation allowances vary from 12 years for separation allowances in Italy to 21 years in Great Britain for pensions to children of soldiers or sailors if they are attending school or receiving technical training. Austria regards as the "normal age" at which allowances and pensions are withdrawn 16 years for boys and 14 years for girls. Germany grants separation allowances only until 15 but pensions until 18 years of age. The new Italian law gives pensions also until 18.

In general, parents or brothers and sisters are eligible for benefits only in the absence of both widow and children, and only if the parents or brothers and sisters were dependent upon the deceased. Italy's new law includes a generous definition of this dependency and Great Britain has added to the dependency provision the alternative that the deceased son or brother was apprenticed at a recognized trade or receiving training at school or articled for a profession.

## AUSTRIA.<sup>1</sup>

### ALLOWANCES.

Under the law of December 26, 1912,<sup>2</sup> relatives of a soldier called to the colors in case of mobilization receive separation allowances provided they are dependent for their living on the soldier's earnings. Persons entitled to the allowance are the wife, children (legitimate and illegitimate), father, mother, unmarried mother, father-in-law and mother-in-law, and brothers and sisters. Each dependent 8 years of age and over is entitled to a sum equivalent to the amount payable for the maintenance of the soldier to the persons with whom he is quartered during maneuvers in time of peace. A law of 1879, to which the law of 1912 specifically refers, fixes this amount at forty-two one-hundredths of a kilogram of beef daily.<sup>3</sup> The cash equivalent is determined annually by the military authorities. Children under 8 years of age receive one-half the amount allowed to adults and older children. Dependents who must pay rent in the soldier's absence receive in addition a rent allowance equal to 50 per cent of the maintenance allowance. The allowance to dependents may not, however, exceed the soldier's average daily earnings in civil life.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Austrian material was prepared by Miss Judith Bernays and Miss Mary D. Hopkins, from the *Reichsgesetzblatt für die im Reichsrat vertretenen Königsreiche und Länder* (Wien, Kaiserliche und Königliche Hof- und Staatsdruckerei). It was not possible to include the provisions for Austrian officers without delaying the publication of the report; but these are now being compiled, and information about Austrian officers can be secured from the Children's Bureau.

<sup>2</sup> Law of Dec. 26, 1912, R. G. Bl., 1912, No. 237, p. 1201; Order of the Minister of National Defense, Dec. 28, 1912, R. G. Bl. No. 238, p. 1203.

<sup>3</sup> Forty-two one-hundredths of a kilogram equals nine hundred and twenty-six one-thousandths of a pound.

<sup>4</sup> The Austrian private soldier of the lowest grade receives 16 heller a day, or 4.8 kronen (97 cents) a month. (H. Schmid, *Handbuch für Unteroffiziere*, Wien, H. Schmid, 1916, pp. 542 and 602.)

Allowances are paid during the soldier's period of active service. If the soldier is killed in battle or dies of a disease contracted in active service, the allowance is continued for six months after his death.

By an imperial order and an order of the ministry of national defense, both of June 12, 1915,<sup>1</sup> these allowances were extended until six months after the close of the present war, and were continued to persons who left active service, and to dependents of the killed for a period longer than the six months after death, prescribed by the law of 1912. In the absence of separation allowances the two above-mentioned orders provide assistance, until six months after the close of the present war, also to disabled soldiers and their dependents and to survivors of soldiers or sailors killed or dying from injuries sustained in war. The soldier, if totally incapacitated, receives 180 kronen (\$36.47) annually, and the benefit may be increased if necessary to secure his proper maintenance. For loss of earning power of from 20 to 50 per cent and from 50 to 100 per cent he receives 60 kronen (\$12.16) annually and 120 kronen (\$24.32) annually, respectively. The wife of a man drawing an invalid's allowance receives 60 kronen (\$12.16), but her benefit, like that for his total disability, may, as an exception, be increased. Children, legitimate or illegitimate, receive in case of their father's total disability 60 kronen (\$12.16); in case his injuries belong to one of the two lower categories, 36 kronen (\$7.29). Parents and grandparents receive 60 kronen (\$12.16) each, provided the total does not exceed 120 kronen (\$24.32). The share of wife, children, or ascendants of a soldier who is drawing the maximum disability allowance may, if necessary to their maintenance, be increased; the total allowance together with the disability pension must not, however, exceed 600 kronen (\$121.56).

In case of soldier's death the widow receives an allowance of 120 kronen (\$24.31) annually; each legitimate child receives 12 kronen (\$2.43); one full orphan receives 36 kronen (\$7.29), but two receive 30 kronen (\$6.08) each; three, 24 kronen (\$4.86) each; and four or more, 18 kronen (\$3.65) each. Each illegitimate child, in the presence of a widow entitled to an allowance and to relief provided by these orders, receives 60 kronen (\$12.16); an illegitimate full orphan, previously supported by the deceased, receives 108 kronen (\$21.88); if there are two orphans, each receives 102 kronen (\$20.67); if three, 96 kronen (\$19.45); if four or more, 90 kronen (\$18.23). Boys receive the pension up to the age of 16, girls until they are 14 years old. Sixty kronen (\$12.16) each is given to the legitimate father or grandfather, to the legitimate or illegitimate mother, to the legitimate father of the illegitimate mother; the total pension to the ascendants is not to exceed 120 kronen (\$24.31).

<sup>1</sup> R. G. Bl. 1915, Nos. 161 and 162; or Bulletin of the International Labor Office, Vol. X, 1915, p. 228.

SCHEDULE 6.—*Austria. Allowances granted for duration of present war and for six months after its conclusion.<sup>1</sup>*

[Sources: Imperial Order, June 12, 1915, Reichsgesetzblatt No. 161; order of Ministry of National Defense, June 12, 1915, Reichsgesetzblatt No. 162.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in kronen; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Recipients.	Stipulations.	Amounts (annual).	Remarks.
A. Disabled soldiers (privates and noncommissioned officers).	1. If loss of earning power in previous occupation = 100 per cent. 2. If loss of earning power, etc. = 50 to 100 per cent. 3. If loss of earning power, etc. = 20 to 50 per cent....	180 (36.47) 120 (24.31) 60 (12.16)	Benefit for A1 may, as exception, be assessed at higher amounts to secure maintenance of incapacitated person. Annual amount of benefit + invalidity pension must not exceed 600 kronen (121.56).
B. Dependents of A. <sup>2</sup>	If husband is receiving benefits under A 1, 2, or 3.... If father is receiving benefit A 1..... If father is receiving benefit A 2 or 3..... If son or grandson is receiving benefits A, provided sum total does not exceed 120 kronen (\$24.32), each beneficiary.	60 (12.16) 60 (12.16) 36 (7.29) 60 (12.16)	Normal age to which benefits paid: Boys, 16; girls, 14. Do.
C. Survivors. <sup>3</sup>	If a man is killed in war, dying of injuries, or missing. If 1..... If 2, each..... If 3, each..... If 4 or more, each..... a. If in competition with a widow entitled to a pension as well as to benefit under C 1. b. If maintained by deceased, but not coming under C 4, a. 1..... 2, each..... 3, each..... 4 or more, each.....	120 (24.31) 12 (2.43) 36 (7.29) Do. 30 (6.45) 24 (4.86) 18 (3.65) 60 (12.16)	Normal age to which benefits paid: Boys, 16; girls, 14.
4. Illegitimate orphan <sup>3</sup> .....	108 (21.58) 102 (20.67) 36 (7.29) Do.	108 (21.58) 102 (20.67) 36 (19.45) 90 (18.23)	Do.
5. Father, grandfather, mother (legitimate or illegitimate), grandmothers (legitimate or illegitimate), father of illegitimate mother.	Provided total does not exceed 120 kronen (\$24.31) 60 (12.16)	60 (12.16)	Parents shall be considered first, grandparents second.

<sup>1</sup> Benefits are granted only on application and in case of proved necessity. Granted from day when legal allowances cease, and if no such allowances are in question, from the first day of the month following the soldier's death. Benefits must be applied for in writing or orally to the president of the commune where the claimant resides or to the Imperial representative authority. They shall be paid monthly in advance.

<sup>2</sup> Dependent's or survivor's benefits (excepting those of orphans who have claim to an education grant under the military provision act) are conditioned on their having received essential support from, or having been at least regularly assisted by, the soldier before his enlistment.

<sup>3</sup> The illegitimate orphans get more than the legitimate ones; this may be due to the fact that the regular pension law excludes illegitimate children, and this temporary provision was intended as a sort of compensation for this exclusion.

DISABILITY PENSIONS.<sup>1</sup>

The basic life pension for disability is graded to length of service beginning with 10 years. Up to 10 years' service temporary pensions are granted for from 1 to 5 years, according to the duration of military unfitness. After 10 years disabled soldiers receive a life pension in 12 classes, varying with length of service. If before 10 years a soldier is incapacitated not only for military service but for wage earning in civil life, he receives the 10-year pension.

To these basic pensions is added, in case the soldier has been wounded in battle, or, in time of peace, in active service, the annual injury bonus varying from 288 kronen (\$58.35) for loss of two limbs or blindness to 96 kronen (\$19.45) for less serious injuries.

## DEPENDENTS' PENSIONS.

A widow may receive a pension not only if her husband dies at any time as a result of war, but if he dies during active service in time of peace or within 5 years of retirement from injuries incurred in the service. If the husband at death had legal claim to a pension, or if, dying in retirement, he was maintained in an invalid home or, instead, drew a disability pension, the widow is entitled to the dependent's pension.<sup>2</sup>

To insure his widow's legal claim to pension the marriage of an officer or noncommissioned officer in time of service must have been duly authorized by the military authorities. Widows of privates draw the pension without regard to time or authorization of marriage if the soldier died in war or from injury or disease incurred in service.

For the widow of an officer the amount varies from 4,000 kronen (\$810.40) to 400 kronen (\$81.04) per year, and for the widow of a private or a noncommissioned officer from 200 kronen (\$40.52) to 48 kronen (\$9.72) per year.

If a soldier has been killed in battle or has died within one year's time from injury in battle or fatigues of war, the widow receives as war bonus 50 per cent in addition to the regular pension. If, moreover, she is destitute and incapable of work, she receives the additional sum of 96 kronen (\$19.45) per year.

The widow of a soldier having claim to a civil pension as well as a military pension draws the military pension only if the soldier died in military service, but if this is less than the civil pension, the balance is paid from the civil-pension fund.

<sup>1</sup> Law of Dec. 27, 1875, R. G. Bl. No. 158, p. 335.

<sup>2</sup> Law of Apr. 27, 1887, R. G. Bl. No. 41, p. 187.

SCHEDULE 7.—*Austria, Army. Disability pensions (annual amounts) to noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.*

[Source: Law of Dec. 27, 1875, R. G. Bl. No. 158.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in kronen; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Years of service.	Noncommissioned officers taking the place of officers.	Disability pensions granted to—			Injury bonus added to pension irrespective of rank or length of service.
		Class III.	Class II.	Class I.	
Sergeant major; corporal of riflemen; sergeant; regimental drummer (infantry); regimental trumpeter (cavalry and artillery); lance corporal; rifleman; master of technical artillery; master of other army divisions, first class.	Section leader, division trumpeter (cavalry and field artillery); battalion trumpeter (fortress artillery); armorer, second class; gunsmith; master of technical artillery, second class; master of other army divisions, first class.	Corporal; rifleman; staff leader; division trumpeter (cavalry and artillery); battalion bugler (infantry); squadron trumpeter (cavalry and baggage train); battery trumpeter (artillery); armorer, third class; squadron harness maker; master, second class, except of technical artillery.	Lance corporal; patrol leader; first gunner, assistant, first class.	Infantryman, rifleman; dragoon, hussar, uhlans; first and second gunner; sapper, first and second class; first and second pioneer; soldier of medical corps; wagoner with baggage train; driver with army service corps; company drummer; company bugler; company trumpeter; pioneer of infantry; officer's servant; assistant, second and third class.	Loss of two members, or blindness.
101.....	216 (43.76)	168 (34.04)	144 (29.17)	120 (24.31)	96 (19.45)
12.....	252 (51.06)	196 (39.71)	140 (28.36)	112 (22.69)	72 (14.59)
15.....	288 (58.35)	224 (45.38)	192 (38.90)	160 (32.42)	84 (17.02)
18.....	324 (65.64)	252 (51.06)	216 (43.76)	180 (36.47)	96 (19.45)
21.....	360 (72.94)	280 (56.73)	240 (48.62)	200 (40.52)	108 (21.88)
24.....	396 (80.23)	308 (62.40)	264 (53.49)	220 (44.57)	144 (29.17)
27.....	432 (87.52)	336 (68.07)	288 (58.35)	240 (48.62)	120 (24.31)
30.....	468 (94.82)	364 (73.75)	312 (63.21)	260 (52.68)	108 (21.88)

<sup>1</sup> Soldiers invalided in active service from wounds in battle or fatigues of war service, mental impairment, epilepsy, blindness, paralysis, injury incurred in service, permanent impairment of health, endemic, epidemic, or contagious disease, if the injured man is incapable of earning his living in civil life, receive the pension before 10 years of service.

SCHEDULE 8.—*Austria, Navy. Disability pensions (annual amounts) to noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.*

[Sources: Law of June 23, 1891, R. G. Bl. No. 91, amending law of Dec. 27, 1875, R. G. Bl. No. 158.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in kronen, amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Years of service.	Disability pensions granted to—				Injury bonus added to pension irrespective of rank or length of service.			
	Quartermaster; <sup>1</sup> steersman; marine mate; marine mate; corps bugler; engine mate; head laborer, first class; steward's mate; cook's mate; mate of medical corps; band mate.	Topman; <sup>1</sup> steersman; marine; depot bugler; <sup>2</sup> engineer's assistant; stoker; head laborer, second class; steward; cook; seaman of medical corps; member of medical corps; bandsman, first class.	Seaman, second class; steersman; engineer; assistant; stoker; head laborer, first class; steward; cook; seaman of medical corps, second class; bandsman, second class.	Seaman, first class; steersman; engineer's assistant; stoker; head laborer, third class; steward; cook; seaman of medical corps; member of medical corps; bandsman, first class.		Class III.	Class II.	Class I.
10 <sup>6</sup> ...	192 (38.90) 224 (45.38) 15..... 18..... 21..... 24..... 27..... 30.....	168 (34.04) 196 (39.71) 224 (45.39) 258 (58.35) 280 (64.83) 332 (71.32) 384 (77.80) 416 (84.28)	144 (29.18) 168 (34.04) 192 (38.90) 224 (45.39) 252 (51.06) 280 (56.73) 308 (62.40) 336 (68.07) 364 (73.75)	120 (24.31) 140 (28.36) 160 (32.42) 180 (36.47) 216 (43.76) 240 (48.62) 264 (53.49) 288 (58.35) 312 (63.21)	108 (21.88) 126 (25.53) 144 (29.17) 162 (32.82) 180 (36.47) 220 (44.51) 240 (48.62) 260 (52.68)	96 (19.45) 112 (22.69) 128 (25.93) 144 (29.17) 162 (32.82) 180 (36.47) 193 (40.11) 216 (43.76) 234 (47.41)	94 (17.62) 98 (19.85) 112 (22.69) 128 (25.93) 144 (29.17) 162 (32.82) 180 (36.47) 193 (40.11) 216 (43.76) 234 (47.41)	84 (17.62) 98 (19.85) 112 (22.69) 128 (25.93) 144 (29.17) 162 (32.82) 180 (36.47) 193 (40.11) 216 (43.76) 234 (47.41)
						96 (19.45)	192 (38.90)	288 (58.35)

<sup>1</sup> Of deck, artillery, torpedo, and mine service.<sup>2</sup> Can also rank as marine quartermaster, and as such draw disability pension of same.<sup>3</sup> Buglers can stand in a higher pay grade, and in such case draw disability pension for such grade.<sup>4</sup> Can also be seaman, third class, and as such draw disability pension of same.<sup>5</sup> Sailors invalided in active service from wounds in battle or fatigue of war service, mental impairment, epilepsy, blindness, paralysis, injury incurred in service, permanent impairment of health, endemic, epidemic, or contagious disease, if the injured man is incapable of earning his living in civil life, receive the pension before 10 years of service.

The widow's pension lapses at death, remarriage, failure to claim it, acceptance of a position in Government service, entrance into a cloister, emigration, or penal sentence.

If the husband of the widow's second marriage dies leaving her without pension, she may once more draw the pension she is entitled to through her first husband.

Children of officers, noncommissioned officers, and privates of a marriage duly authorized by the military authorities, or children legitimated by a later marriage so authorized, are entitled to pension if the father died in active service with claim to pension, or, dying in retirement, was maintained in an invalid home or instead drew a disability pension.<sup>1</sup>

Children of privates and noncommissioned officers of any marriage, regardless of time or authorization, or children legitimated by a later marriage, draw the pension if the father was killed in war or died of injury or disease incurred in service.

The total amount of orphans' benefits may not exceed for an officer's children the amount of the widow's pension; and the sum total of the family's pensions may not exceed the amount of the pension received by the officer, if pensioned, before his death.

Each child of a private or a noncommissioned officer receives 48 kronen (\$9.73) per year. The amount of pensions paid to the whole family must not, however, exceed 360 kronen (\$72.94) per year.

Full orphans, or children whose mother or step-mother has no claim to the widow's pension, receive the children's pension plus 50 per cent in addition. The sum of these pensions may not exceed 360 kronen (\$72.94). Hence, if there are more than five full orphans the share of each will be 360 kronen (\$72.94) divided by their number.

Pensions to children are paid up to the so-called normal age: In case of officers' children 20 years for boys and 18 for girls, and in case of children of soldiers, 16 years for boys and 14 for girls. The pension may cease earlier if the orphan enters a military or naval educational institution, or other public institution at the State's expense, is married (if a girl), obtains a salaried position, public or private, is apprenticed to a trade, etc.

#### METHOD OF PAYMENT.

The widow's and orphan's pension is paid monthly in advance, beginning with the first day of the first month after the soldier's death. The children's pensions are paid to the mother or step-mother, or, if there is no such, to the guardian.

The disability pension is paid monthly in advance beginning the first day of the month after the issuing of the retirement order.

<sup>1</sup> Law of Apr. 27, 1887, No. 41, R. G. Bl. 1887, p. 187.



Girls up to 14 years of age.....	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)	48(9.73)
Boys up to 16 years of age.....								
Or orphan whose mother or step-mother had no claim to widow's pension.								
<b>EACH FULL ORPHAN<sup>4</sup></b>								
Girls up to 14 years of age.....	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)	72(14.59)
Boys up to 16 years of age.....								

1. The widow of a noncommissioned officer is entitled to pension if her marriage, during service, took place with due military authorization, and her husband at the time of his death had claim to a pension, was maintained in an invalid home, or instead drew a disability pension. The widow of a private soldier dying under the circumstances a, b, or c draws the pension regardless of time of marriage. On remarriage the widow forfeits her pension, but receives a lump sum equal to one year's payment.

2. Children of noncommissioned officers of a duly authorized marriage which would establish claim to a widow's pension, or children legitimated by a later marriage of the parents, provided the father dying in active service had claim to a pension, or dying in retirement was maintained in an invalid home, or instead drew a disability pension, are entitled to the orphan's pension. Children of noncommissioned officers dying under the circumstances a or b draw pension regardless of time or authorization of marriage. Children of privates of any marriage or children legitimated by a subsequent marriage are entitled to the pension.

3. The sum of the widow's and children's pension may not exceed 360 k. (672.94). In case of its so doing each child receives its proportional share of the difference between 360 k. (\$72.94) and the widow's pension.

4. The sum of the pensions paid to full orphans must not exceed 360 k. (\$72.94). Hence, if there are more than five orphans, each receives  $\frac{360}{x}$  or \$72.94.

x

x

SCHEDULE 10.—France. Summary of provisions for the maintenance of soldiers' families.

Sources of assistance.	Classes eligible as recipients.	Amount of allowance.	Notes.
Assigned pay.....	<p><i>Of military pay:</i></p> <p>(1) Wives, descendants, or ascendants of officers (and equivalent grades) and of noncommissioned officers (and equivalent grades) who assign voluntarily.</p> <p>(2) Wives, descendants, or ascendants of mobilized officers and noncommissioned officers, who, upon mobilization, failed to exercise their right of voluntary assignment of pay. (Law Oct. 9, 1914.)</p> <p>(3) Families of mobilized men, who before mobilization, were civil officials or employees, and who continue to draw their civil salaries as a whole or in part. (Law Apr. 5, 1914.)</p> <p>(4) Needy families whose breadwinners have been called or recalled to the colors, either in army or navy. (Law Aug. 5, 1914.)</p> <p>(2) Families of the same status living in the French colonies. (Decree Sept. 15, 1914.)</p> <p>(3) Needy families whose breadwinners have been recalled to the English, Belgian, Russian, or Serbian colors, or who have been permitted to enlist in the French Army (but first deduction is made of amounts paid by other countries). (Decree Aug. 14, 1914.)</p> <p>(4) Needy families of French citizens living abroad, who have been recalled to the colors. (Decree Aug. 14, 1914.)</p> <p>(5) Needy families of certain State employees and workmen, and certain military persons retained in military establishments or in workshops in civil industry (instead of their salaries under certain conditions). (Decree June 12, 1915.)</p> <p>(6) Needy families of merchant seamen who have lost their wages as a result of the capture or destruction of their ships. (Law Apr. 9, 1915.)</p> <p>(7) All needy French families residing in France, whose breadwinner—not a soldier—15, without fault of his own, a victim of a circumstance of war suffered on French soil or in a region occupied by the French Army. (Law Apr. 28, 1916.)</p>	<p>(1) One-half the military pay of the grade held at time of departure. (Decree Jan. 10, 1912, art. 18.)</p> <p>(2) One-half the military pay (assigned by official authorization).<sup>3</sup> (Law Oct. 9, 1914.)</p> <p>The whole or any part of the salary drawn (by voluntary assignment). (Law Aug. 5, 1914.)</p> <p>A fixed allowance of 1 franc 25 centimes (\$0.24) daily to the family dependent upon the soldier for support.<sup>7</sup> (Law Aug. 7, 1913.)</p> <p>An additional allowance of 75 centimes (\$0.15) a day<sup>8</sup> for each child under 16,<sup>9</sup> dependent upon the breadwinner whether his own or not, and for each ascendant who, before mobilization, was dependent upon the breadwinner. (Law Mar. 31, 1917.)</p>	<p><sup>1</sup> See schedule of military pay, p. 45. The amounts assignable vary from 832 francs 50 centimes (\$160.87) a month for a division general, to 13 francs 8 centimes (\$2.66) (minimum) for a sergeant.</p> <p><sup>2</sup> Employees who would not be provided in the army with the grade either of officer or noncommissioned officer at a monthly salary, draw their full civil salary in addition to their military pay. Those provided with the above-mentioned grades draw the difference between the civil and military pay, if the civil pay is higher, but no civil pay if the military pay is higher.</p> <p><sup>3</sup> The soldier must be notified at once of the official assignment, and if he objects and states his objections in writing to his commanding chief or to the sub-intendant in charge of the pay roll, the assignment stops.</p> <p><sup>4</sup> Those whose regular salaries are continued during the war can not draw the separation allowance. (Min. circ. Oct. 10, 1914.)</p> <p><sup>5</sup> "Needy" families are described as those "whom the absence of one of their members has been deprived of the necessary means of existence." Specially excluded are those families "whose means of existence have been reduced but remain sufficient." (Inter-ministerial circ. Aug. 23, 1914.)</p> <p><sup>6</sup> If a victim has dependents he receives the allowance and additional allowances specified in law of Aug. 5, 1914, for the families of soldiers. If he has no dependents he receives personally the chief allowance granted to the head of the family. (Law Apr. 28, 1916.)</p> <p><sup>7</sup> Any one is eligible to receive the allowance who is the head of the family. But only one allowance may be drawn by the family no matter how many breadwinners it may have sent to the colors. (Decree Aug. 23, 1914.)</p> <p><sup>8</sup> Recently raised from 50 centimes (9.7 cents), the amount fixed by law of Aug. 7, 1913.</p> <p><sup>9</sup> The allowance for a newly-born child dates from the day of its birth. (Decree Aug. 4, 1914.) A bill of</p>
Separation allowance <sup>4</sup> .			

Indemnity for large families,<sup>10</sup> Needy families having more than 3 children, legitimate or acknowledged, dependent on them, receive aid as follows:

For every child under 13 in excess of 3, under 13 in (if father and mother living and caring for them together). For every child under 13 in excess of 1 under 13, in (if mother is left alone). For every child under 13 in excess of 2 under 13, in (if father is left alone). (Law July 14, 1913.)

Officers of the army to the grade of major, military employees, noncommissioned officers, corporals, soldiers serving beyond the legal time, members of the gendarmerie who have more than 2 children legally dependent on them.<sup>11</sup> Corresponding grades in the navy (corvette captains to seamen serving beyond the required term of service). (Decree Dec. 15, 1914.) During hostilities payment may be officially assigned to the wife or person having charge of children.<sup>12</sup> (Law Oct. 5, 1915.)

Indemnity for dependent children.

Nov. 18, 1915, proposing to grant a supplementary allowance for an unborn child from the fourth month of pregnancy, shown by a physician's certificate, was not passed. (J. O. dep. parl., 1915, No. 1458, p. 125L.)

The service is administered by the prefects with the supervision of the minister of the interior and the cooperation of the municipal councils.

Counted as equivalent to children under 13 are children from 13 to 16 placed out under certain conditions or written contract of apprenticeship. (Law July 14, 1913.)

Not included under this allowance are children attending a state institution without paying board; those holding a scholarship or an equivalent state benefit.

In case of official assignment of the indemnity to those having charge of the children the soldier can enter no objection. (Law Oct. 5, 1915.)

In its original form (Law July 17, 1913), this allowance was granted only to "needy French women who habitually work outside their own homes in a paid position as factory worker, employee, or domestic." One who is also eligible to draw the civil pension (as in the case of a civil employee who has been called to the colors) may renounce the military and draw the civil pension if it is to his advantage. (Law Mar. 14, 1915.)

From 50 centimes (\$0.10) (minimum) to 1 franc 50 centimes (\$0.20) (maximum) daily for the period immediately before and immediately after confinement, not to exceed 8 weeks. The amount is that of the woman's home district fixed by the municipal council, with the approval of the prefect. An increase of 50 centimes a day after confinement is allowed to mothers nursing the child. (Law July 30, 1913, Art. 69.)

(See Schedule 12, France, military pensions, p. 52.)

(1) Soldiers retired for length of service. (2) Soldiers retired on account of wounds or disabilities received during service. (3) Widows or orphans of soldiers killed under the colors, or dying from wounds or disabilities received in service. (Law Apr. 11, 1831.)

Military pensions<sup>13</sup> . . . . .

[For abbreviations used in this section see p. 67.]

**SEPARATION AND OTHER ALLOWANCES FOR FAMILIES OF OFFICERS  
AND MEN IN ACTIVE SERVICE.**

The chief provisions for the support of soldiers' families in France are the separation allowance, paid to the family while the bread-winner is away serving the colors, and the pension given to the soldier either on retirement as a reward for length of service or for injuries received while in service, or to the widow or orphans of soldiers killed in action or dying from injuries received while under the colors. In addition to these two general provisions there are a number of other State allowances and privileges by which the family may benefit either as citizens or as the family of a soldier. The bread-winner himself may be able still to contribute to the family support by the assignment of a part of his military pay or of his continued civil salary. (See schedule 10, p. 42.)

**ASSIGNED PAY.**

The pay of privates in the French Army is negligible—25 centimes (4.8 cents) a day—and can not be relied upon as a contribution to the family fund. Above the grade of private, machinery is provided for the voluntary assignment to the family of one-half the military pay; and even for the assignment by official authority in case no voluntary assignment has been made.<sup>2</sup> This, however, is canceled if the soldier upon notification fails to sanction it and states his objection in writing to the military authorities. The plan seems to be intended as an aid in the assignment of the pay according to the soldier's wishes rather than as a measure of compulsion.

In cases of soldiers "missing" or dead the assigned pay is continued until the matter of a pension is adjusted at the end of hostilities, unless the amount of assigned pay is less than that of the pension, when the assignment stops and the claimants may at once draw advances on their pension.

Through the machinery of the civil government, mobilized men whose civil salary is continued may assign it as a whole or in part to whomsoever they wish to designate. But no provision is made for assignment by State authority in case of failure on the part of the soldier to assign.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The French material was prepared by Miss Edith Rockwell Hall.

<sup>2</sup> Decree Jan. 10, 1912 (Bull. off. min. de la guerre, vol. 60); Oct. 9, 1914 (Dalloz I, 212).

<sup>3</sup> Law Aug. 5, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 6, 1914).

SCHEDULE 11.—*France. Military pay.*

[Source: Agenda Militaire 1916.]

## A. OFFICERS AND THOSE OF EQUIVALENT RANK.

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in francs; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Pay (yearly pay calculated at monthly rate).
General of division:	
Chiefintendant.....	1,665 (321.35).
General medicalinspector.....	
Brigadier general:	
Military intendant.....	1,200 (231.60).
Medicalinspector.....	
Colonel:	
Subintendant, first class.....	990 (191.07).
Chief physician or apothecary, first class.....	
Lieutenant colonel:	
Subintendant, second class.....	750 (144.75).
Chief physician or apothecary, second class.....	
Major:	
Subintendant, third class.....	675 (130.28). After 4 years of grade or 32 years of service.
Physician or apothecary major, third class.....	600 (115.80). Before 4 years of grade.
Captain:	
Assistant in the intendance.....	555 (107.12). After 12 years of grade, or 8 years of grade and 30 years of service.
Physician, apothecary, or veterinary major, second class.....	510 (98.43). After 8 years of grade, or 4 years of grade and 25 years of service.
Administrative officer of the various services, first class.....	465 (89.75). After 4 years of grade or 20 years of service.
Chief interpreter, first class.....	420 (81.06). Before 4 years of grade.
Lieutenant:	
Physician, apothecary, or veterinary aide-major, first class.....	406.50 (78.45). After 8 years of grade and 20 years of service.
Administrative officer of the various services, second class.....	361.50 (69.77). After 8 years of grade, or 4 years of grade and 15 years of service.
Chief interpreter, second class.....	331.50 (63.98). After 4 years of grade, or 10 years of service.
Chief musician, second class.....	301.50 (58.19). Before 4 years of grade.
Sublieutenant:	
Cadet sublieutenant.....	270 (52.11). After 6 years of service.
Physician, apothecary, or veterinary aide-major, second class.....	240 (46.32). Before 6 years of service.
Administrative officer of the various services.....	
Cadet veterinary aide-major, second class.....	220.50 (42.56).
Sublieutenant of reserve, who has not finished his legal time of service.	210 (40.53).
Interpreter.....	177 (34.16).
Chaplain.....	465 (89.75).

SCHEDULE 11.—*France. Military pay—Continued.*

## B. NONCOMMISSIONED OFFICERS IN ALL BRANCHES.

Grade.	Those not re-enlisted, or enlisted and re-enlisted up to the 5th year of service (daily pay calculated at monthly rate).	Reenlisted or commissioned men after their 6th year of service (monthly pay).		
		6th to 8th year (inclusive).	9th to 11th year (inclusive).	12th year and after.
Chief adjutant.....	95.70 (18.47)	207 (39.95)	207 (39.95)	207 (39.95)
Adjutant: Assistant director of music.....	73.20 (14.13)	177 (34.16)	184.50 (35.61)	192 (37.06)
Chief of the riding school or Assistant instructor of horsemanship.....				
Chief armorer, first class.....				
Sergeant major: First sergeant.....	30.60 (5.91)	135 (26.06)	142.50 (27.50)	150 (28.95)
Sergeant of horsemanship.....				
Chief mechanician.....				
Drum major.....	28.20 (5.44)			
Chief bugler or bandmaster.....				
Sergeant trumpeter.....				
Chief armorer, second class.....				
Sergeant saddler.....				
Sergeant and quartermaster sergeant: Assistant quartermaster sergeant.....	27.60 (5.33)	126 (24.32)	133.50 (25.77)	141 (27.21)
Trumpeter.....				
Sergeant mechanician or electrician.....				
Assistant sergeant or instructor of horsemanship.....				
Assistant armorer.....	60 (11.58)	154.50 (29.82)	154.50 (29.82)	162 (31.27)
Aspirant.....				

## C. RANK AND FILE IN ALL BRANCHES (EXCEPT FIRST THREE REGIMENTS OF ALGERIAN SHARPSHOOTERS AND THE REGIMENTS OF ALGERIAN SPAHIS).

Grade.	Corporal quartermaster; brigadier quartermaster; brigadier armor.	Corporal; drum or bugle cor- poral; corporal sapper; brigadi- er; brigadier trumpeter; musician after 10 years' service.	Master gunner; master work- man.	Soldier; cavalryman; gunner; sapper; and driver of engineering trains; work- men attached to batteries; companies of workmen; assistant horse- sheer; harness maker; drum- mer; bugler; trumpeter; in- fantry sapper; soldier and pupil musician; soldiers of special sections; cadets of mili- tary prepara- tory schools.
Pay (daily pay calculated at monthly rate).....	21.60 (4.17)	12.60 (2.43)	8.10 (1.56)	7.50 (1.45)

SCHEDULE 11.—*France. Military pay—Continued.*

## D. NONCOMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND PRIVATES, EXTRA PAY FOR LENGTH OF SERVICE.

Grade.	Branch of the service.	Daily extra pay.			Notes.
		After 3 years.	After 6 years.	After 10 years.	
Noncommissioned officers and those of equivalent rank. (See pay table.)	Cavalry and artillery of cavalry divisions.	1. 20 (0.23)	After the sixth year the extra pay is included in the monthly pay.		<sup>1</sup> Extra pay of a corporal is given to musicians who receive the pay of corporals.
Corporals <sup>1</sup> .....	Other branches....	1. (0.193)			
	Cavalry and artillery of cavalry divisions.	.93 (0.18)	.98 (0.19)	1. 03 (0.20)	<sup>2</sup> Master gunners of the artillery serving beyond the required time have the right to a special extra pay of 93 centimes (\$0.18) a day.
Privates <sup>2</sup> .....	Other branches....	.60 (0.12)	.65 (0.13)	.70 (0.14)	
	Cavalry and artillery of cavalry divisions.	.85 (0.16)	.90 (0.17)	.95 (0.18)	
	Other branches....	.20 (0.04)	.25 (0.05)	.30 (0.06)	

*Continued salaries.*—Officials and employees of the State, when mobilized, have their civil salaries continued wholly or in part according to their army grade. If for those provided in the army with the grade either of officer or of noncommissioned officer the military pay is less than the civil, the difference between the two is added from the civil salary; if the military pay is higher than their civil salary, they do not draw the civil salary at all. Those who are serving as privates in the army are entitled to the whole of their civil salary which, as stated above, they may assign wholly or in part for direct payment to their families.<sup>1</sup>

As Government pay is continued under certain conditions, so certain private employers appear to have continued the salaries of those of their workers called to the army. The Government does not supervise such moneys in any way but has ruled that a separation allowance can not be drawn by the family of a soldier enjoying a continued salary, either State or private.<sup>2</sup>

## SEPARATION ALLOWANCE.

Of the official resources the chief substitute for the breadwinner's regular earnings is the separation allowance, established in time of peace for a limited class and extended gradually from the outbreak of the war to cover, first, all needy families of enlisted men—whether French living in France, the colonies, or abroad, or those of allied nations living in France whose breadwinners have joined their own or the French colors <sup>3</sup>—and, second, “all needy French families residing

<sup>1</sup> Law Aug. 5, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 6, 1914).

<sup>2</sup> Ministerial circular Oct. 10, 1914 (J. O. Oct. 11, 1914).

<sup>3</sup> Law Aug. 5, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 6, 1914); decree Sept. 15, 1914 (J. O. Sept. 20, 1914); decree Aug. 14, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 15, 1914).

in France whose breadwinner—not a soldier—is, without fault of his own, a victim of a circumstance of war suffered on French soil in a region occupied by the French Army.”<sup>1</sup> The allowance, fixed by the earlier peace legislation at three-fourths of a franc (14.4 cents) a day, with an additional allowance of one-fourth franc (4.9 cents) for each dependent child under 16 years of age, was in 1913 raised to 1 franc 25 centimes (24 cents) for the chief allowance (at which rate it still continues) and to 50 centimes (10 cents) per child for the additional allowance. In 1917 this additional allowance was raised to 75 centimes (14.4 cents) and extended to include ascendants who, before mobilization, were dependent on the soldier.<sup>2</sup>

The allowance fund is charged on the budget of the military depot in which the soldier is registered. It is administered by special commissions (one or more in each canton) consisting of three members appointed by the prefect. These cantonal commissions decide on the merits of cases transmitted to them by the mayors, who receive direct applications from the families claiming the allowance and forward them to the cantonal commission together with a statement of the economic condition and size of the family and a copy of their tax receipt, on which their right of application is based.<sup>3</sup>

The decisions of the cantonal commissions go into effect at once, but are open to appeal either by the claimant (if rejected) or by the subprefect (if the grant appears to him to have been unjustly given) before a commission of five members appointed by the prefect and meeting at the chief town of the district.

Above these local commissions of appeal stands the superior commission appointed by the minister of the interior as a last court of appeal. This commission, consisting at first of 31 members, was later increased to 50 and finally 100.<sup>4</sup> With them are associated a number of judge advocates and a special representative of the Government and his deputy. The commission sits either in sectional groups (of which there are 10) to consider cases assigned to them by the president of the commission, or in general assembly, which deliberates upon matters referred to it by the Government representatives, or by a particular section, or upon matters which the president has reserved to be judged in the committee of the whole.<sup>5</sup> Every three months the president sends to the minister of the interior a report of the commission’s work.

<sup>1</sup> Law Apr. 28, 1916 (J. O. Apr. 30, 1916); law Mar. 21, 1905, art. 22 (J. O. Mar. 23, 1905); law Apr. 8, 1910 (J. O. Apr. 10, 1910).

<sup>2</sup> Law Aug. 7, 1913 (Bull. du min. du travail, Vol. XX, p. 72\*); law Mar. 31, 1917 (J. O. Apr. 1, 1917); law Aug. 8, 1913 (Bull. du min. du travail, Vol. XX, p. 74\*); ministerial circular Aug. 4, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 6, 1914).

<sup>3</sup> Decree Aug. 2, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 3, 1914).

<sup>4</sup> Law Dec. 26, 1914 (Dalloz, II, p. 244); decree Dec. 31 1914 (Dalloz, III, p. 9); decree Feb. 18, 1915 (Dalloz, III, p. 198).

<sup>5</sup> Decree Dec. 31, 1914 (Dalloz, III, p. 9).

The object of the separation allowance is plainly to prevent want during the breadwinner's absence, not to supply the customary family income. From the first there appears to have been difficulty in making just decisions as to recipients, and the matter is the subject of a number of ministerial circular letters to the subprefects. "Needy" families are described as those "whom the absence of one of their number has deprived of the necessary means of subsistence." Specifically excluded are those families "whose means of existence have been reduced but remain sufficient. Judgment (in regard to eligibility and need) should always be made in a large spirit of humanity, and the applicant given the benefit of the doubt."<sup>1</sup> For instance, "the fact of owning a little house or a bit of ground, of paying a few francs land tax, or a small license, or the fact of being a farmer either on shares or as tenant, does not exclude an applicant for allowance without investigation."<sup>2</sup> But these words are qualified in the same circular letter by a warning to the prefect that the application of the law has led to mistakes and abuses and that "while the law should be applied in a large spirit of humanity, every effort should at the same time be made to avoid waste and to keep a rigorous control over the moneys of the State."<sup>3</sup> A special perplexity arose when the question of labor supply became acute and the prefects are specially enjoined to make it clear that women need not fear the loss of their allowances by becoming wage-earners in agriculture or in factories.<sup>4</sup>

#### MATERNITY BENEFITS.

The claim of a newborn child for an additional allowance starts from the day of birth. A bill for the inclusion of an unborn child has failed to become law, but quite recently the maternity benefit hitherto granted to women working for wages outside their homes has been extended to all French women drawing separation allowance and to all refugees receiving special government aid. This allowance of from 50 centimes (10 cents) minimum to 1 franc 50 centimes (29 cents) maximum a day extends over a period of eight weeks, with an extra daily allowance of 50 centimes (10 cents) after confinement to those mothers who nurse their children.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Interministerial circular Aug. 23, 1914 (J. O. Aug. 25, 1914).

<sup>2</sup> Ministerial circular Oct. 10, 1914 (Daloz, I, p. 221).

<sup>3</sup> Minister of interior, reply to question No. 2983 (J. O., July 7, 1915).

<sup>4</sup> Ministerial circular May, 1916 (Bull. des Usines de Guerre, 1916, p. 31); ministerial circular Jan. 8, 1915 (J. O., Jan. 12, 1915).

<sup>5</sup> Law June 17, 1913 (J. O., June 19, 1913); law Jan. 23, 1917 (J. O., Jan. 23, 1917); law July 30, 1913, art. 69 (J. O., July 31, 1913).

## INDEMNITY FOR LARGE FAMILIES.

This indemnity was established not as war relief but as encouragement to citizens of the poorer class generally in the rearing of large families. The annual grant is 60 francs (\$11.58) minimum to 90 francs (\$17.37) maximum, for each child under 13 years of age in excess of 3 under 13 if both parents care for them together; in excess of 2 under 13 if cared for by father alone; in excess of 1 under 13 if cared for by mother alone. It is given only to needy families and may be received in addition to the separation allowance. The rate in each case is fixed by the local authorities, and at the discretion of the administering officer the allowance may be paid wholly or in part in rent or in kind through the local bureau of charities.<sup>1</sup>

## INDEMNITY FOR DEPENDENT CHILDREN.

This was established first as a military grant to officers (up to the grade of major), military employees, noncommissioned officers, corporals, and soldiers serving beyond their required term, and to the equivalent grades in the Navy. It was recently extended to civil functionaries as well. The grant is 200 francs (\$38.60) a year for each dependent child under 16 years in excess of 2 children of whatever age.<sup>2</sup> It may be assigned through the pay office, either voluntarily on the part of the soldier or during hostilities by official authority, to the wife or other person proving that she has charge of the soldier's children. If such official assignment is made, the soldier can not repudiate it.<sup>3</sup>

## MILITARY PENSIONS AND DISABILITY ALLOWANCES.

The pension system of France is at present undergoing a thorough revision by the bill introduced on November 4, 1915.<sup>4</sup> On July 21, 1916, the bill was the subject of an exhaustive report to the Chamber of Deputies by an extraparliamentary commission, which recommended the bill with certain important additions and amendments.<sup>5</sup> Although presented in this amended form nearly a year ago it has apparently not yet been adopted into law.

The present pension law is based upon the old law of 1831, modified only slightly from time to time, and that rather in the matter of rates and in a widening of its application (e. g., to native and colonial troops) than in its fundamental plan.<sup>6</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Law July 14, 1913 (J. O., July 15 and 16, 1913).

<sup>2</sup> Law Dec. 30, 1913 (J. O., Dec. 31, 1913); decree Aug. 26, 1914 (Daloz, suppl. 1-2, p. 52); decree Dec. 15, 1914 (Daloz, suppl. 1-2, p. 210).

<sup>3</sup> Law Oct. 5, 1915 (Daloz, VI, p. 255).

<sup>4</sup> J. O., ch. dép. doc., 1915, Annexe 1410, p. 1140.

<sup>5</sup> J. O., ch. dép. doc., sess. ord., 1916, vol. 3, Annexe 2383, p. 1934.

<sup>6</sup> Law Apr. 11 (Army), 1831, and law Apr. 18 (Navy), 1831 (Bull. des Lois, 9th series, No. 81, pp. 161-176, 233-247).

The right to a minimum pension for length of service comes to officers and enlisted men in the army and navy after an active service of 30 or 25 years, according to the corps and grade. In computing service, years of campaign count double. Beyond the minimum the pension is augmented by a yearly increase for service beyond 30 or 25 years, the maximum being reached at 50 or 45 years of service. Retirement on a proportional pension may be taken by those below the grade of officer after 15 years, but this carries no right to the widow or orphans in case of death.<sup>1</sup>

#### DISABILITY PENSIONS.

The disability pension is merely an anticipation of the retirement pension, the rate being the minimum or maximum of the retirement pension with a bonus for certain exceptional afflictions. The wound or infirmity on which the claim is based must have come from the events of war or from accidents experienced while on duty under orders (service commandé). The disability must be incurable and must involve at least 60 per cent reduction in earning power, as measured by the official guide scale.<sup>2</sup> (See Guide Barême, p. 63.)

Disabilities are grouped into six classes or four grades:<sup>3</sup> (1) The amputation of two limbs or total loss of sight, recompensed by a bonus of 20 per cent for officers, 30 per cent for noncommissioned officers and privates, over and above the maximum retirement pension; (2) The amputation of one limb or the loss of the use of two limbs, recompensed by the maximum retirement pension; (3) The loss of use of one limb or an equivalent disability, recompensed by the minimum retirement pension augmented by the annual increase of the soldier's grade for each year of service or campaign; (4) Lesser wounds or infirmities pronounced incurable and equal to a disability of at least 60 per cent, judged by the official disability scale. This class is also recompensed by the minimum retirement pension augmented by the annual increase of the soldier's grade for each year of service over and above 30 or 25 years. In the case of an officer he must be adjudged incapacitated for further service; in the case of a noncommissioned officer or private, incapacitated for self-support as well.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 1; law Apr. 26, 1856; law Apr. 9, 1914.

<sup>2</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 12; circular minister of war, Mar. 3, 1906.

<sup>3</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 15-17; Laws June 25 and 26, 1861, art. 4.

<sup>4</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 14.

## SCHEDULE 12.—

## I. COMMISSIONED OFFICERS

[A. Present schedule. B. Schedule of bill introduced Nov. 4, 1915. C. Amendments proposed by the Commission, July 21, 1916.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses in francs; amounts inside of parentheses in dollars.]

Grade.		Retirement pensions for length of service. <sup>1</sup>			Pensions for 10 classes of disability. <sup>2</sup>		
Army.	Navy.	Minimum, after 30 years.	Yearly increase.	Maximum, after 50 years.	First class, 100 per cent.	Second class, 90 per cent.	Third class, 80 per cent.
General of division.	Vice admiral.	A 7,000 (1,351.00)	175 (33.78)	10,500 (2,026.50)	12,600 (2,431.80)	-----	10,500 (2,026.50)
		B (1)	(1)	(1)	12,600 (2,431.80)	-----	10,500 (2,026.50)
		C (1)	(1)	(1)	12,600 (2,431.80)	11,550 (2,229.15)	10,500 (2,026.50)
General of brigade	Rear admiral.	A 6,000 (1,158.00)	100 (19.30)	8,000 (1,544.00)	9,600 (1,852.80)	-----	8,000 (1,544.00)
		B (1)	(1)	(1)	9,600 (1,852.80)	-----	8,000 (1,544.00)
		C (1)	(1)	(1)	9,600 (1,852.80)	8,800 (1,698.40)	8,000 (1,544.00)
Colonel.....	Captain (de vaisseau).	A 4,500 (868.50)	75 (14.48)	6,000 (1,158.00)	7,200 (1,389.60)	-----	6,000 (1,158.00)
		B (1)	(1)	(1)	7,200 (1,389.60)	-----	6,000 (1,158.00)
		C (1)	(1)	(1)	7,200 (1,389.60)	6,600 (1,273.80)	6,000 (1,158.00)
Lieutenant colonel.	Commander (captain de frigate).	A 3,700 (714.10)	65 (12.55)	5,000 (965.00)	6,000 (1,158.00)	-----	5,000 (965.00)
		B (1)	(1)	(1)	6,000 (1,158.00)	-----	5,000 (965.00)
		C (1)	(1)	(1)	6,000 (1,158.00)	5,500 (1,061.50)	5,000 (965.00)
Major.....	Corvette captain.	A 3,000 (579.00)	50 (9.65)	4,000 (772.00)	4,400 (926.40)	-----	4,000 (772.00)
		B (1)	(1)	(1)	4,800 (926.40)	-----	4,000 (772.00)
		C (1)	(1)	(1)	5,025 (969.83)	4,400 (849.20)	4,000 (772.00)

<sup>1</sup> The retirement pension is not discussed in the proposed new law.

<sup>2</sup> Disability pensions are granted only for incurable disabilities. The four classes established in the law of 1831 and retained to the present time give the 100 per cent pension to classes (1) and (2) (of the Guide Barème, p. 63), 80 per cent pension to classes (3) and (4), and 60 per cent pension to classes (5) and (6). Less severe permanent disabilities graded by the old law at 50 per cent or less do not receive pension, but a renewable allowance. The grades of pensionable disabilities are increased to 8 in the proposed law, as it was introduced, and to 10 in the recommendations of the commission, as here shown on lines B and C, respectively. The proposed law adds to the pensions of disabled men up to the grade of major, an extra allowance for each child under 16; the rate is the same for all military ranks and amounts to 100 francs (\$19.30) yearly if the father is receiving a 100 per cent pension, and 10 francs (\$1.93) yearly if he is receiving a 10 per cent pension, with intermediate rates in proportion. Temporary disability is met for officers in "non-activity" with "disability pay" and for noncommissioned officers and privates with renewable and permanent allowances (gratifications). See Schedule 13, p. 58.

<sup>3</sup> Widow: Marriage must antedate wound or infirmity leading to husband's death.

Orphan: Legitimate children only, including those of a former marriage (old law); illegitimate children also, if recognized voluntarily or by action of the courts (new proposed law).

By the bill of Nov. 4, 1915, a widow's pension carries a uniform extra allowance of 100 francs (\$19.30) for each child under 16 years. If the mother is not living the orphans receive the additional allowance for all but the eldest.

## France. Military pensions.

## AND THEIR DEPENDENTS.

[A. Present schedule. B. Schedule of bill introduced Nov. 4, 1915. C. Amendments proposed by the Commission, July 21, 1916.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses in francs; amounts inside of parentheses in dollars.]

Pensions for 10 classes of disability 2—Continued.							Pensions to widows and full orphans. <sup>3</sup>	
Fourth class, 70 per cent.	Fifth class, 60 per cent.	Sixth class, 50 per cent.	Seventh class, 40 per cent.	Eighth class, 30 per cent.	Ninth class, 20 per cent.	Tenth class, 10 per cent.	Normal: One-half maximum retirement.	Exceptional: Three-fourths maximum retirement.
	7,000 (1,351.00)						3,500 (675.50)	5,250 (1,013.25)
	8,167 (1,576.23)	7,000 (1,351.00)	5,600 (1,080.80)	4,200 (810.60)	2,800 (540.40)	1,400 (270.20)	3,500 (675.50)	5,250 (1,013.25)
8,750 (1,688.75)	7,000 (1,351.00)	5,833 (1,125.77)	4,667 (900.73)	3,500 (675.50)	2,333 (450.27)	1,167 (225.23)	3,500 (675.50)	5,250 (1,013.25)
	6,000 (1,158.00)						2,667 (514.73)	4,000 (772.00)
	6,667 (1,286.73)	6,000 (1,158.00)	4,808 (927.94)	3,600 (694.80)	2,400 (463.20)	1,200 (231.60)	2,667 (514.73)	4,000 (772.00)
7,000 (1,351.00)	6,000 (1,158.00)	5,000 (965.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,000 (579.00)	2,000 (386.00)	1,000 (193.00)	2,667 (514.73)	4,000 (772.00)
	4,500 (868.50)						2,000 (386.00)	3,000 (579.00)
	5,000 (965.00)	4,500 (868.50)	3,600 (694.80)	2,700 (521.10)	1,800 (347.40)	900 (173.70)	2,000 (386.00)	3,000 (579.00)
5,250 (1,013.25)	4,500 (868.50)	3,750 (723.75)	3,000 (579.00)	2,250 (434.25)	1,500 (289.50)	750 (144.75)	2,000 (386.00)	3,000 (579.00)
	3,700 (714.10)						1,667 (321.73)	2,500 (482.50)
	4,133 (797.67)	3,700 (714.10)	2,960 (571.28)	2,220 (428.46)	1,480 (285.64)	740 (142.82)	1,667 (321.73)	2,500 (482.50)
4,350 (839.55)	3,700 (714.10)	3,083 (595.02)	2,467 (476.13)	1,850 (357.05)	1,233 (237.97)	617 (119.08)	1,667 (321.73)	2,500 (482.50)
	3,000 (379.00)						1,333 (257.27)	2,000 (386.00)
	3,333 (643.27)	3,000 (579.00)	2,400 (463.20)	1,800 (347.40)	1,200 (231.60)	600 (115.80)	1,333 (257.27)	2,000 (386.00)
3,500 (675.50)	3,000 (579.00)	2,500 (482.50)	2,000 (386.00)	1,500 (289.50)	1,000 (193.00)	500 (96.50)	1,333 (257.27)	2,000 (386.00)

Right to pension for widow and orphan (full orphans (minor) enjoy same pension rights as widow and on her death inherit her rights. As each child becomes of age (21 years) his share passes to the remaining minors):

Old law—

- (1) If soldier is killed on field of battle, or from wounds received there—exceptional pension.
- (2) If soldier is killed on duty under orders or from wounds received on duty under orders—normal pension.
- (3) If death is caused by endemic or contagious disease contracted in service—normal pension.
- (4) If soldier died in enjoyment of retirement or disability pension, or in possession or rights to either—normal pension.

Proposed law—

Proposed law extends exceptional pension to (2) and enlarges (3) to include maladies—whatever their nature—contracted in the course of dangers, accidents or fatigues of war. It also extends right of pension to widows and orphans of soldiers having curable disabilities of the first five classes (at least 60 per cent disability) who die in enjoyment of renewable allowances or in possession of rights to them. It provides that the special children's allowance granted on behalf of children under 16 to fathers receiving pension in the five lower classes of disabilities (which do not entitle to reversion of pension to widow and orphans) shall continue after the father's death at the same rate until the child is 16 years of age.

<sup>4</sup> Rate for total blindness and loss of two limbs was raised to amount given in C on July 6, 1917. (J.O., July 6, 1917.)

## SCHEDULE 12.—

## 1. COMMISSIONED OFFICERS

Grade.		Retirement pensions for length of service. <sup>1</sup>			Pensions for 10 classes of disability. <sup>2</sup>		
Army.	Navy.	Minimum, after 30 years.	Yearly increase.	Maximum, after 50 years.	First class, 100 per cent.	Second class, 90 per cent.	Third class, 80 per cent.
Captain	Fourth grade.	A 2,900 (559.70) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,900 (752.70) (1) (1)	4,680 (903.21) 4,680 (903.21) 4,905 (946.67)	----- (752.70) 3,900 (752.70) 4,290 (827.97)	3,900 (752.70) 3,900 (752.70)
	Third grade.	A 2,700 (521.10) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,700 (714.10) (1) (1)	4,440 (956.92) 4,440 (956.92) 4,665 (900.35)	----- (714.10) 3,700 (714.10) 4,070 (785.51)	3,700 (714.10) 3,700 (714.10) 3,700 (714.10)
	Second grade.	A 2,500 (482.50) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,500 (675.50) (1) (1)	4,200 (810.60) 4,200 (810.60) 4,425 (854.03)	----- (675.50) 3,500 (675.50) 3,500 (675.50)	3,500 (675.50) 3,500 (675.50) 3,500 (675.50)
	First grade.	A 2,300 (443.90) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,300 (636.90) (1) (1)	4,960 (761.28) 3,960 (761.28) 4,185 (807.71)	----- (636.90) 3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90)	3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90)
First lieuten- ant.	Fourth grade.	A 2,300 (443.90) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,300 (636.90) (1) (1)	4,960 (761.28) 3,960 (764.28) 4,185 (807.71)	----- (636.90) 3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90)	3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90) 3,300 (636.90)
	Third grade.	A 2,150 (414.95) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,150 (607.95) (1) (1)	4,780 (729.54) 3,780 (729.54) 4,005 (772.97)	----- (607.95) 3,150 (607.95) 3,465 (668.75)	3,150 (607.95) 3,150 (607.95) 3,150 (607.95)
	Ensign, first class.	A 2,000 (386.00) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	3,000 (579.00) (1) (1)	4,3600 (694.80) 3,600 (694.80) 3,825 (738.23)	----- (579.00) 3,000 (579.00) 3,300 (636.90)	3,000 (579.00) 3,000 (579.00) 3,000 (579.00)
	Second grade.	A 1,850 (357.05) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	2,850 (550.05) (1) (1)	4,3420 (660.06) 3,420 (660.06) 3,645 (703.49)	----- (550.05) 2,850 (550.05) 3,135 (605.06)	2,850 (550.05) 2,850 (550.05) 2,850 (550.05)
Second lieuten- ant.	Second grade.	A 1,800 (347.40) B (1) C (1)	50 (9.65) (1) (1)	2,800 (540.40) (1) (1)	4,3360 (648.48) 3,360 (648.48) 3,585 (691.91)	----- (540.40) 2,800 (540.40) 3,080 (594.44)	2,800 (540.40) 2,800 (540.40) 2,800 (540.40)
	Ensign, second class.	A 1,500 (289.50) B (1) C (1)	40 (7.72) (1) (1)	2,300 (443.90) (1) (1)	4,2760 (532.68) 2,760 (532.68) 2,985 (576.11)	----- (443.90) 2,300 (443.90) 2,530 (488.29)	2,300 (443.90) 2,300 (443.90) 2,300 (443.90)

France. Military pensions—Continued.

AND THEIR DEPENDENTS—Continued.

Pensions for 10 classes of disability <sup>2</sup> —Continued.							Pensions to widows and full orphans. <sup>3</sup>	
Fourth class, 70 per cent.	Fifth class, 60 per cent.	Sixth class, 50 per cent.	Seventh class, 40 per cent.	Eighth class, 30 per cent.	Ninth class, 20 per cent.	Tenth class, 10 per cent.	Normal: One-half maximum retirement.	Exceptional: Three-fourths maximum retirement.
	2,900 (559.70)						1,300 (250.90)	1,950 (376.35)
	3,233 (623.97)	2,900 (559.70)	2,320 (447.76)	1,740 (335.82)	1,160 (223.88)	580 (111.94)	1,300 (250.90)	1,950 (376.35)
3,400 (656.20)	2,900 (559.70)	2,417 (466.48)	1,933 (373.07)	1,450 (279.55)	967 (186.63)	483 (93.22)	1,300 (250.90)	1,950 (376.35)
	2,700 (521.10)						1,233 (237.97)	1,850 (357.05)
	3,033 (585.37)	2,700 (521.10)	2,160 (416.88)	1,620 (312.66)	1,080 (208.44)	540 (104.22)	1,233 (237.97)	1,850 (357.05)
3,200 (617.60)	2,700 (521.10)	2,250 (434.25)	1,800 (347.40)	1,350 (260.55)	900 (173.70)	450 (86.85)	1,233 (237.97)	1,850 (357.05)
	2,500 (482.50)						1,167 (225.23)	1,750 (337.75)
	2,833 (546.77)	2,500 (482.50)	2,000 (386.00)	1,500 (289.50)	1,000 (193.00)	500 (96.50)	1,167 (225.23)	1,750 (337.75)
3,000 (579.00)	2,500 (482.50)	2,083 (402.02)	1,667 (321.73)	1,250 (241.25)	833 (160.77)	417 (80.48)	1,167 (225.23)	1,750 (337.75)
	2,300 (443.90)						1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
	2,633 (508.17)	2,300 (443.90)	1,840 (355.12)	1,380 (266.34)	920 (177.56)	460 (88.78)	1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
2,800 (540.40)	2,300 (443.90)	1,917 (369.98)	1,533 (295.87)	1,150 (221.95)	767 (148.03)	383 (73.92)	1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
	2,300 (443.90)						1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
	2,633 (508.17)	2,300 (443.90)	1,840 (355.12)	1,380 (266.34)	920 (177.56)	460 (88.78)	1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
2,800 (540.40)	2,300 (443.90)	1,917 (369.98)	1,533 (295.87)	1,150 (221.95)	767 (148.03)	383 (73.92)	1,100 (212.30)	1,650 (318.45)
	2,150 (414.95)						1,050 (202.65)	1,575 (303.98)
	2,483 (479.22)	2,150 (414.95)	1,720 (331.96)	1,290 (248.97)	860 (165.98)	430 (82.99)	1,050 (202.65)	1,575 (303.98)
2,650 (511.45)	2,150 (414.95)	1,792 (345.86)	1,433 (276.57)	1,075 (207.48)	717 (138.38)	358 (69.09)	1,050 (202.65)	1,575 (303.98)
	2,000 (386.00)						1,000 (193.00)	1,500 (289.50)
	2,333 (450.27)	2,000 (386.00)	1,600 (308.80)	1,200 (231.60)	800 (154.40)	400 (77.20)	1,000 (193.00)	1,500 (289.50)
2,500 (482.50)	2,000 (386.00)	1,667 (321.73)	1,333 (257.27)	1,000 (193.00)	667 (128.73)	333 (64.27)	1,000 (193.00)	1,500 (289.50)
	1,850 (357.05)						950 (183.35)	1,425 (275.03)
	2,183 (421.32)	1,850 (357.05)	1,480 (285.64)	1,110 (214.23)	740 (142.82)	370 (71.41)	950 (183.35)	1,425 (275.03)
2,350 (453.55)	1,850 (357.05)	1,542 (297.61)	1,233 (237.97)	925 (178.53)	617 (119.08)	398 (76.81)	950 (183.35)	1,425 (275.03)
	1,800 (347.40)						933 (180.07)	1,400 (270.20)
	2,133 (411.67)	1,800 (347.40)	1,410 (277.92)	1,080 (208.44)	720 (138.96)	360 (69.48)	933 (180.07)	1,400 (270.20)
2,300 (443.90)	1,800 (347.40)	1,500 (289.50)	1,200 (231.60)	900 (173.70)	600 (115.80)	300 (57.90)	933 (180.07)	1,400 (270.20)
	1,500 (289.50)						767 (148.03)	1,150 (221.95)
	1,767 (341.03)	1,500 (289.50)	1,200 (231.60)	900 (173.70)	600 (115.80)	300 (57.90)	767 (148.03)	1,150 (221.95)
1,900 (366.70)	1,500 (289.50)	1,250 (241.25)	1,000 (193.00)	750 (144.75)	500 (96.50)	250 (48.25)	767 (148.03)	1,150 (221.95)

## SCHEDULE 12.—France

## II. NONCOMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND

[A. Present schedule. B. Schedule of bill introduced Nov. 4, 1915.

[Amounts outside of parentheses in francs; amounts inside of parentheses in dollars.]

Grade.		Retirement pensions for length of service. <sup>1</sup>			Pensions for 10 classes of disability. <sup>2</sup>		
Army.	Navy.	Minimum, after 25 years.	Yearly increase.	Maximum, after 45 years.	First class, 100 per cent.	Second class, 90 per cent.	Third class, 80 per cent.
Chief adjutant.	A	1,100 (212.30)	15 (2.90)	1,400 (270.20)	4 1,820 (351.26)	.....	1,400 (270.20)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,820 (351.26)	.....	1,400 (270.20)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,045 (394.69)	1,650 (318.45)	1,466.66 (283.07)
Adjutant.	A	1,000 (193.00)	15 (2.90)	1,300 (250.90)	4 1,690 (326.17)	.....	1,300 (250.90)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,690 (326.17)	.....	1,300 (250.90)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,915 (369.60)	1,500 (289.50)	1,333.33 (257.33)
"Aspirant".	A	950 (183.35)	15 (2.90)	1,250 (241.25)	4 1,625 (313.63)	.....	1,250 (241.25)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,625 (313.63)	.....	1,250 (241.25)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,850 (357.05)	1,425 (275.03)	1,266.66 (244.47)
Sergeant major.	A	900 (173.70)	15 (2.90)	1,200 (231.60)	4 1,560 (301.08)	.....	1,200 (231.60)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,560 (301.08)	.....	1,200 (231.60)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,785 (344.51)	1,350 (260.55)	1,200 (231.60)
Sergeant.	A	800 (154.40)	15 (2.90)	1,100 (212.30)	4 1,430 (275.99)	.....	1,100 (212.30)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,430 (275.99)	.....	1,100 (212.30)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,655 (319.42)	1,237.50 (238.84)	1,100 (212.30)
Corporal.	Quartermaster	A	700 (135.10)	10 (1.93)	900 (173.70)	4 1,170 (225.81)	900 (173.70)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,170 (225.81)	.....	900 (173.70)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,395 (269.24)	1,050 (202.65)	933.33 (180.13)
Soldier.	Sailor.	A	600 (115.80)	7.50 (1.45)	750 (144.75)	4 975 (188.18)	750 (144.75)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	975 (188.18)	.....	750 (144.75)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,200 (231.60)	900 (173.70)	800 (154.40)
Chief mate.	A	1,234 (238.16)	15 (2.90)	1,534 (296.06)	4 2,665 (514.35)	.....	2,050 (395.65)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,665 (514.35)	.....	2,050 (395.65)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,800 (540.40)	2,357.50 (455.00)	2,050 (395.65)
Mate.	A	1,234 (238.16)	15 (2.90)	1,534 (296.06)	4 2,340 (451.62)	.....	1,800 (347.40)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,340 (451.62)	.....	1,800 (347.40)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,565 (495.05)	2,070 (399.51)	1,800 (347.40)
Second mate.	A	1,200 (231.60)	15 (2.90)	1,500 (289.50)	4 1,950 (376.35)	.....	1,500 (289.50)
	B	(1)	(1)	(1)	1,950 (376.35)	.....	1,500 (289.50)
	C	(1)	(1)	(1)	2,175 (419.78)	1,725 (332.93)	1,500 (289.50)

## Military pensions—Continued.

## PRIVATES AND THEIR DEPENDENTS.

C. Amendments proposed by the Commission, July 21, 1916.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses in francs; amounts inside of parentheses in dollars.]

Pensions for 10 classes of disability <sup>2</sup> —Continued.							Pensions to widows and full orphans. <sup>3</sup>	
Fourth class, 70 per cent.	Fifth class, 60 per cent.	Sixth class, 50 per cent.	Seventh class, 40 per cent.	Eighth class, 30 per cent.	Ninth class, 20 per cent.	Tenth class, 10 per cent.	Normal: One-half maximum retirement.	Exceptional: Three-fourths maximum retirement.
	1,100 (212.30)	916.65 (176.91)	733.33 (141.53)	550 (106.15)	366.66 (70.77)	183.33 (35.38)	700 (135.10)	1,050 (202.65)
	1,200 (231.60)	1,100 (212.30)	880 (169.84)	660 (127.38)	440 (84.92)	220 (42.46)	700	1,050
283.33 (247.68)	1,100 (212.30)	916.65 (176.91)	733.33 (141.53)	550 (106.15)	366.66 (70.77)	183.33 (35.38)	700	1,050
	1,000 (193.00)	833.33 (160.83)	666.66 (128.67)	500 (96.50)	333.33 (64.33)	166.66 (32.17)	650 (125.45)	975 (188.18)
	1,100 (212.30)	1,000 (193.00)	800 (154.40)	600 (115.80)	400 (77.20)	200 (38.60)	650	975
1,166.66 (225.17)	1,000 (193.00)	833.33 (160.83)	666.66 (128.67)	500 (96.50)	333.33 (64.33)	166.66 (32.17)	650	975
	950 (183.35)	791.65 (152.79)	633.33 (122.23)	475 (91.68)	316.66 (61.12)	158.33 (30.56)	625 (120.63)	937 (180.84)
	1,050 (202.65)	950 (183.35)	760 (146.68)	570 (110.01)	380 (73.34)	190 (36.67)	625	937
1,108.33 (200.01)	950 (183.35)	791.65 (152.79)	633.33 (122.23)	475 (91.68)	316.66 (61.12)	158.33 (30.56)	625	937
	900 (173.70)	750 (144.75)	600 (115.80)	450 (86.85)	300 (57.90)	150 (28.95)	600 (115.80)	900 (173.70)
	1,000 (193.00)	900 (173.70)	720 (138.96)	540 (104.22)	360 (69.48)	180 (34.74)	600	900
1,050 (202.65)	900 (173.70)	750 (144.75)	600 (115.80)	450 (86.85)	300 (57.90)	150 (28.95)	600	900
	800 (154.40)	666.66 (128.67)	533.33 (102.93)	400 (77.20)	266.66 (51.47)	133.33 (25.73)	550 (106.15)	825 (159.23)
	900 (173.70)	800 (154.40)	640 (123.52)	480 (92.64)	320 (61.76)	160 (30.88)	550	825
962.50 (185.76)	825 (159.23)	687.50 (132.69)	550 (106.15)	412.50 (79.61)	275 (53.08)	137.50 (26.54)	550	825
	700 (135.10)	583.33 (112.58)	466.66 (90.07)	350 (67.55)	233.33 (45.03)	116.66 (22.52)	450 (86.85)	675 (130.28)
	767 (148.03)	700 (135.10)	560 (108.08)	420 (81.06)	280 (54.04)	140 (27.02)	450	675
816.66 (157.62)	700 (135.10)	583.33 (112.58)	466.66 (90.07)	350 (67.55)	233.33 (45.03)	116.66 (22.52)	500 (96.50)	675
	600 (115.80)	500 (96.50)	400 (77.20)	300 (57.90)	200 (38.60)	100 (19.30)	375 (72.38)	563 (108.66)
	650 (125.45)	600 (115.80)	480 (92.64)	360 (69.48)	240 (46.32)	120 (23.16)	375	563
700 (135.10)	600 (115.80)	500 (96.50)	400 (77.20)	300 (57.90)	200 (38.60)	100 (19.30)	460 (72.38)	563
	1,450 (279.85)	1,208.33 (233.21)	966.66 (186.57)	725 (139.93)	483.33 (93.28)	241.66 (46.64)	767 (148.03)	1,150 (221.95)
	1,650 (318.45)	1,450 (279.85)	1,160 (223.88)	870 (167.91)	580 (111.94)	290 (55.97)	767	1,150
1,750 (337.75)	1,450 (279.85)	1,208.33 (233.21)	966.66 (186.57)	725 (139.93)	483.33 (93.28)	241.66 (46.64)	767	1,150
	1,300 (250.90)	1,083.33 (209.08)	866.66 (167.27)	650 (125.45)	433.33 (83.63)	216.66 (41.82)	767 (148.03)	1,150 (221.95)
	1,467 (283.13)	1,300 (250.90)	1,040 (200.72)	780 (150.54)	520 (100.36)	260 (50.18)	767	1,150
1,550 (299.15)	1,300 (250.90)	1,083.33 (209.08)	866.66 (167.27)	650 (125.45)	433.33 (83.63)	216.66 (41.82)	767	1,150
	1,100 (212.30)	916.66 (176.92)	733.33 (141.53)	550 (106.15)	366.66 (70.77)	183.33 (35.38)	750 (144.75)	1,125 (217.13)
	1,233 (237.97)	1,100 (212.30)	880 (169.84)	600 (127.38)	440 (84.92)	220 (42.46)	750	1,125
1,300 (250.90)	1,100 (212.30)	916.66 (176.92)	733.33 (141.53)	550 (106.15)	366.66 (70.77)	183.33 (35.38)	750	1,125

Disabilities were loosely graded by custom and successive laws until 1879, when a commission was appointed to list the various disabilities in a scale according to their severity. This scale was adopted as a standard by both the Army and the Navy by the ministerial decisions of July 23 and November 28, 1887, and, though slightly modified in 1905 and 1907, it is still in force for the application of disability pensions. The grading is largely arbitrary, based on the need to meet the military classification rather than on a scientific measurement of the real degree of the disability.<sup>1</sup>

#### ALLOWANCES FOR TEMPORARY DISABILITY.

No pension provision is made for multiple infirmities nor for incurable infirmities graded below 60 per cent disability, nor for temporary disabilities of whatever seriousness. These last two classes of invalidity are at least partially cared for in the case of officers by a provision for "inactivity for temporary disability, with disability pay (*soldé de réforme*)"; also by their right to invalidity retirement after 25 years of service.<sup>2</sup>

For those below the grade of officer temporary disability is met by a system of allowances (gratifications), either temporary or permanent.<sup>3</sup> (See Schedule 13, below.) These, in the present régime,

SCHEDULE 13.—*France. Schedule of indemnities (annual amounts, renewable or permanent) for temporary or minor disabilities.*<sup>a</sup>

[Source: Decree Mar. 24, 1915 (J. O. Mar. 28, 1915).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in francs; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grades.	Allowances for curable infirmities or wounds involving at least 60 per cent disability.			Allowances for curable or incurable infirmities or wounds involving less than 60 per cent disability.				
	First class, 100 per cent.	Second class, 80 per cent.	Third class, 60 per cent.	Fourth class, 50 per cent.	Fifth class, 40 per cent.	Sixth class, 30 per cent.	Seventh class, 20 per cent.	Eighth class, 10 per cent.
Chief adjutant.....	1,820 (351.26)	1,400 (270.20)	1,100 (212.30)	910 (175.63)	730 (140.89)	550 (106.15)	368 (71.02)	181 (35.51)
Adjutant.....	1,690 (326.17)	1,300 (250.90)	1,000 (193.00)	832 (160.58)	666 (128.54)	500 (96.50)	334 (64.46)	168 (32.42)
"Aspirant".....	1,625 (313.63)	1,250 (241.25)	950 (183.35)	791 (152.66)	633 (122.17)	475 (91.68)	318 (61.37)	159 (30.69)
Sergeant major.....	1,560 (301.08)	1,200 (231.60)	900 (173.70)	750 (144.75)	600 (115.80)	450 (86.85)	300 (57.90)	150 (28.95)
Sergeant.....	1,430 (275.99)	1,100 (212.30)	800 (154.40)	666 (128.54)	533 (102.87)	400 (77.20)	268 (51.72)	134 (25.86)
Corporal.....	1,170 (225.81)	900 (173.70)	700 (135.10)	582 (112.33)	466 (89.94)	350 (67.55)	234 (45.16)	118 (22.77)
Soldier.....	975 (188.18)	750 (144.75)	600 (115.80)	500 (96.50)	400 (77.20)	300 (57.90)	200 (38.60)	100 (19.30)

<sup>a</sup> This indemnity for temporary disability does not at present exist for officers. Their case is met by their position of "inactivity for temporary infirmities" with disability pay. (Law August 17, 1834, and Law August 17, 1879; see J. O. ch. dép. doc. 1916, p. 1947.)

<sup>1</sup> Commission report July 21, 1916 (J. O., ch. dép. doc., sess. ord., 1916, vol. 3, Annexe 2383, p. 1952).

<sup>2</sup> Law June 25, 1861; law Aug. 17, 1879.

<sup>3</sup> Decree Jan. 3, 1857; decree Mar. 31, 1906; decree Mar. 24, 1915.

are quite distinct from pensions. They have been established and developed as an emergency means of meeting an evident hardship; they are granted not as a right, but as a benevolent award (concession gracieuse), and are therefore revocable for misconduct. They are granted first as temporary aid, renewable for two-year periods and subject to biennial medical examinations and reports. But, according to the physician's report, they may at any time be suppressed (if the disability falls below 10 per cent), converted into a permanent indemnity (for an incurable affliction causing 10 per cent to 50 per cent disability), or into a pension (if augmented to 60 per cent disability and pronounced incurable). Neither the temporary nor the permanent allowance reverts to the widow.

The amounts granted in the first three grades (temporary disability 100 per cent, 80 per cent, or 60 per cent) correspond to the pensions given in classes 1 and 2, 3 and 4, 5 and 6, respectively (in the last class, however, with the increase for extra years of service). The amounts of the grades from 50 per cent to 10 per cent, curable or incurable, are directly fixed by the decree.

The careful percentage grading and grouping of the disabilities recompensed by these special allowances necessitated a more exact listing of disabilities than that of 1887, which has been made to serve, even to the present day, for the more arbitrary classification of pension disabilities. The Government brought out in 1906 and again in 1915 a medical disability guide scale,<sup>1</sup> drawn up in accordance with the dicta of modern medical science and civil jurisprudence, in which infirmities are classed according to their exact scientific measurement of disability and scaled from 100 per cent to 10 per cent. The extraparliamentary commission, reporting in July, 1916, on the proposed pension law, stated that a still more minute scale was in preparation which will grade disabilities more closely and will be used for the administration of the new pension law, as well as for the special allowances.

The new law<sup>2</sup> concerning industrial reeducation and treatment of disabled soldiers passed on July 6, 1917, provides that during the period of reeducation, if the payment of the pension has not commenced, the family continues to receive the separation allowance. If the pension has been begun and if the one-twelfth part of it is less than the monthly amount of the allowance granted to the family, the difference will be given at the end of the period of reeducation. In no case can the rate of pension be reduced on account of the professional reeducation and readaptation to work.

<sup>1</sup> Not found among available material.

<sup>2</sup> J. O., sén. déb., July 6, 1917, p. 709.

## PENSION RIGHTS OF WIDOWS AND ORPHANS.

Widows and orphans have a right to a pension in the following cases: (1) When the husband or father is killed on the field of battle, or dies as a result of wounds received there; (2) when he is killed on duty under orders, or dies from wounds received thereby; (3) when he dies from diseases (endemic or contagious) contracted in service; (4) when he dies in possession of a pension or rights to a pension; (5) when legally declared "missing."<sup>1</sup> In this case it is given only provisionally and after a waiting period, and immediate need is met by emergency relief (*secours immédiat*) to those in receipt of official notification that the soldier has been missing at least six months. In the first case the pension is "exceptional"—one-half (officers) or three-fourths (noncommissioned officers and privates) of the amount of the maximum retirement pension.

The "normal" pension granted in the other four cases amounts to one-third (officers) or one-half (noncommissioned officers and privates) of the maximum retirement pension.

In all cases the marriage must have antedated the injury. The amount of the widow's pension is the same regardless of the existence or number of children. Minors inherit the pension, passing down their share, on coming of age, to the remaining minors. Only legitimate children are entitled to pensions. Children of a former marriage share on equal terms as individuals while the widow is living, but on the death of the widow inherit the pension in two equal parts with the children of the second marriage. No provision is at present made for ascendants.<sup>2</sup>

PROPOSED LEGISLATION.<sup>3</sup>

In discussing the new law the commission dwells on the significance of the modern army as a nation in arms, as compared with the old professional army of celibates without family responsibilities. In the new view pensions are regarded as a liquidation of social obligation and should be so planned as to make reparation as justly as possible for all the wounded, all the sick, all those dead as a result of war. At several important points, therefore, along these lines, the new law aims to correct inadequacies and injustices of the old, as follows:

1. It fixes the amount of disability pensions without regard to the pension for length of service, making them directly proportional to the injury received. (See Schedule 12, p. 52.)

<sup>1</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 19, 22; law Apr. 15, 1885; law Dec. 8, 1905; law Apr. 13, 1878, art. 38, 44; law Feb. 25, 1901, art. 48. Circular minister of war Jan. 26, 1916; law Apr. 26, 1856, art. 1; law June 20, 1878; law Aug. 18, 1879.

<sup>2</sup> Laws Apr. 11 and 18, 1831, art. 21; decision of State council, June 13, 1845 (*Recueil des Arrêts du Conseil d'Etat*, 1845, p. 353).

<sup>3</sup> On July 6, 1917, the Senate passed the bill already passed by the Chamber of Deputies to raise the rate of military pensions in case of absolute blindness or the loss of two limbs to the amounts stated in the schedule of the proposed pension law. (J. O., July 7, 1917.)

2. It takes into consideration the matter of dependent children, and provides for extra allowances as a matter of social assistance.

3. It makes provision for illegitimate children treating them as legitimate where no widow or legitimate children exist. If these exist the illegitimate child is treated as the child of a former marriage. His position is established by recognition of parentage, either voluntary or by court action (with certain reservations, however, in regard to the sincerity of voluntary acknowledgment).

4. It gives the disability pension, not on the old basis of ability to render military service, but according to the exact degree of disability, measured by medical science and charted in a revised guide-scale. A proposal has been offered to make the workmen's compensation law of 1898 applicable to military life,<sup>1</sup> but the commission on pensions gives as its opinion that it would be impracticable as well as unjust to make the amount of pension for a war injury depend on the civil earning power.

5. It holds that illness of any sort contracted in war service gives legitimate claim to a pension, and it grants a pension on behalf of those "whose death is caused by a malady—whatever its nature—contracted in the course of dangers, accidents, or fatigues of service."

6. It holds that ascendants should count among dependents having a right to consideration and proposes to make provision for them in a life allowance fixed at a uniform amount regardless of grade.

SCHEDULE 14.—*France. Present and proposed provisions for ascendants.*

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in francs; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

PRESENT LAW.

(Renewable emergency aid if ascendants are needy and if soldier left neither widow nor orphan. Amount varies according to grade of soldier and age and resources of petitioner.)

Soldier.....	50- 70 ( 9.65-13.51)
Noncommissioned officer.....	60- 80 (11.58-15.44)
Lieutenant, first and second.....	80-100 (15.44-19.30)
Captain.....	90-120 (17.37-23.16)
Major.....	120-200 (23.16-38.60)
Lieutenant colonel, colonel.....	150-250 (28.95-48.25)
General.....	200-400 (38.60-77.20)

J. O. ch. dép. doc. sess. ord., 1916, vol. 3, p. 1967.

PROPOSED LAW OF NOVEMBER 4, 1915.

Life allowance to needy cases for:

Mother alone.....	$\frac{1}{3}$ widow's pension.
Father alone.....	$\frac{1}{3}$ widow's pension.
Mother and father.....	$\frac{1}{2}$ widow's pension.
Grandmother alone.....	$\frac{1}{4}$ widow's pension.
Grandfather alone.....	$\frac{1}{4}$ widow's pension.
Grandmother and grandfather.....	$\frac{1}{3}$ widow's pension.

<sup>1</sup> J. O., ch. dép. doc. sess. ord., January-April, 1914, vol. 2, p. 1801.

To receive allowance: (1) There must be no widow or orphans; (2) ascendant must be infirm and at least 60 years of age; (3) he must prove that soldier would have been his support if alive; (4) ascendant nearest in degree has the only right to allowance.

J. O., ch. dép. doc. sess. ord., 1916, vol. 3, p. 1967.

PROPOSED LAW AS MODIFIED BY THE COMMISSION.

Uniform renewable allowance regardless of grade:

Mother alone .....	150 (28.95)
Father alone.....	150 (28.95)
Mother and father.....	250 (48.25)
Grandmother alone.....	100 (19.30)
Grandfather alone.....	100 (19.30)
Grandmother and grandfather .....	175 (33.77)

Given in form of relief through local civil courts. Officially renewed automatically unless court decides otherwise.

J. O., ch. dép. doc. sess. ord., 1916, vol. 3, p. 1970.

GOVERNMENT RELIEF.

In addition to the regular pensions and military allowances, certain financial assistance is given by the ministry of war as relief (secours) of various sorts.

IMMEDIATE RELIEF.

This relief is given in case of the soldier's death to the widow or orphans, or (failing these) to ascendants, or in rare cases to younger dependent brothers and sisters of an unmarried soldier. The amount varying from 150 francs (\$28.95) for the family of a private to 800 francs (\$154.40) for that of a general is given only once.

PERMANENT RELIEF.

Permanent relief is open to widows and orphans who have allowed their pension claim to lapse; to old soldiers who have lost their sight or who have suffered amputation while in service but from causes outside their service; to widows and orphans of officers who have died in enjoyment of the disability allowance which is granted in the absence of a pension (pension de réforme). The relief is given if the applicants are found upon investigation to be worthy and in need, and it is withdrawn only if they prove unworthy or if their financial condition improves. The amount is variable within each grade according to the resources of each case.

SPECIAL OR OCCASIONAL RELIEF (SECOURS ÉVENTUEL).

In cases worthy of attention, special relief may be given to soldiers having been through an active campaign or to their widows or orphans (even if death takes place after active service has ceased) or to their ascendants if they do not leave either widow or orphans. The grant is purely gratuitous and is renewable only upon renewed request and within the limits of the special budget appropriation. The

amount varies in each grade according to the length of service, the age, and the resources of the applicant.

#### OTHER RELIEF.

Finally there is relief "in anticipation of the pension" for the benefit of those awaiting their rights, and extreme emergency relief given to the very needy. This is given in amounts varying from 5 to 10 francs (97 cents to \$1.93).

The part played by the war relief (secours) as an adjunct to the pension provision is indicated by the recent disbursements. The official figures from the beginning of the war to October 1, 1916, show appropriations amounting to 81,540,519 francs<sup>1</sup> (\$15,737,320) for assistance, over 72,000,000 francs (\$13,896,000) of which were to be used for immediate relief.

Besides the relief extended directly from the War Department, financial assistance is also available to soldiers' families from the "Fund of National Subscription" (Offrandes Nationales). This is a semi-independent institution but recognized as a public utility and organized under ministerial supervision. Relief from this source can be received in addition to a pension. Assistance is at present being given to the following classes: (1) Soldiers wounded and rendered infirm in service; (2) widows of soldiers who were married before leaving active service; (3) soldiers' orphans born during the time of the father's active service; (4) ascendants of soldiers killed by the enemy or dying from illness contracted in service and leaving neither widow nor orphans.

#### GUIDE BARÈME.

[*Pour Obtenir une Pension Militaire.* Léon Parisot, Editions et Librairies, Paris, 1915, p. 26.]

CLASSIFICATION TABLE OF WOUNDS AND INFIRMITIES GIVING RIGHT TO A PENSION ACCORDING TO THE CATEGORIES FIXED BY THE LAWS OF APRIL 11 AND 18, 1831.

##### CLASS I.

Total blindness.

##### CLASS II.

Amputation of two limbs.

##### CLASS III.

Amputation of one limb (hand or foot).

##### CLASS IV.

Total loss of use of two limbs, or equivalent infirmities:

1. Complete hemiplegia or paraplegia of traumatic origin or caused by fatigues of service.
2. Serious disturbance of cerebral functions, loss of memory, of speech, imbecility, dementia, mental aberration, etc., resulting from wounds of the head, congestion, insolation, meningo-encephalitis, fatigues of service, etc.

<sup>1</sup> J. O., ch. dép. doc. sess. ord., 1916, v. 3, Annexe 2383, p. 1988.

3. General paralysis at the stage of incontinence of urine or feces.
4. Extensive mutilations of the face, including at the same time either the eye, the orbit of the eye, and the upper jawbone on one side; the two upper jawbones and the nose or an upper and a lower jawbone; the whole lower jaw and the tongue.
5. Fistula of the stomach, artificial anus, opening from small intestine (resulting from a wound).
6. Loss of the penis and testicles by a wound.
7. Simultaneous ankylosis of several joints of the upper and lower limbs, resulting from rheumatic affections contracted in service.

CLASS V.

8. Tarso-metatarsal, mediotarsal, sub-astragaloid amputation, when walking is possible on the stump.
9. Incomplete hemiplegia and paraplegia, permitting some useful movements, caused by traumatism or fatigues of service.
10. General progressive paralysis at the static stage, caused by fatigues of service.
11. Progressive locomotor ataxia, caused by fatigues of service.
12. Epilepsy, epileptiform attacks, chorea, functional spasms, paralysis agitans, spasmotic or other neuroses (motor or sensory), resulting from trauma or occurrence of service.
13. Paralysis of an important organ (muscles of the eye, of the tongue, of the pharynx, of the larynx, of the bladder, etc.), caused by traumatism or fatigues of service.
14. Progressive muscular atrophy, affecting a whole limb or two limbs incompletely or extending to the muscles of the trunk, and caused by fatigues of service.
15. An ulcer or ulcerated scar resulting from a great loss of tissue.
16. Elephantiasis, leprosy, or ulcers, deep, extensive, or numerous, due to a hot climate.
17. A deep and extensive scar of the skull with loss of tissue of the pericranium, and of the whole thickness of the bone, caused by traumatism or an operation.
18. Persistent deviation of the head or trunk producing marked limitation of movement and resulting from traumatism or an affection contracted during service (lesion of the spine or muscles).
19. Complete deafness of both ears, resulting from a wound or from a disease contracted during service.
20. The destruction or atrophy of an eye or complete loss of sight, or a very apparent external deformity of the eyeball (staphyloma, leucoma, hernia of the iris, etc.).
21. Loss of sight of one eye, diminution of the sight of the other, or weakening of visual acuity of less than  $\frac{1}{4}$  in both eyes, resulting from disease contracted in service (granular ophthalmia, irido-choroiditis, papillary atrophy, etc.).
22. Deformity of the face, of the eyelids, and of the lachrymal ducts; loss of the nose, etc., causing an important limitation of function and resulting from traumatism.
23. Deformity of either jaw with extensive loss of tissue, deviation of the rows of teeth, or loss of the greater part of the teeth, or destruction of the hard palate or the soft palate; or ankylosis of the temporo-mandibular articulation, caused by a wound.
24. A permanent fistula or constriction of the respiratory passages from traumatic causes (fracture of the larynx, injury to the trachea, etc.), laryngo-tracheotomy performed for a disease contracted in service.
25. Persistent fistula or constriction of the pharynx and the oesophagus as a result of wounds.
26. Persistent fistula or considerable contraction of the thorax either from traumatic causes or from pleurisy or from the operation for empyema, if the disease was occasioned by the fatigues or dangers of service, independently of any constitutional predisposition.

27. Irreducible hernia of the lung from traumatic causes.
28. Chronic affection of the heart and large blood vessels from traumatic causes or from a rheumatic or infectious disease contracted in service.
29. Chronic bronchitis complicated with emphysema and with a heart affection or attacks of asthma caused by fatigues of service.
30. Tuberculosis of the respiratory organs (larynx, lungs, pleural cavities) or of the digestive organs (intestine, peritoneum, other viscera) caused by fatigues of service and independent of any appreciable constitutional predisposition.
31. A chronic affection of the stomach, following upon an endemic disease of hot climates, or caused by a long stay in these climates or by the fatigues of service.
32. Dysentery or chronic diarrhea, producing a general undermining of the constitution, contracted in a hot climate or in field service.
33. Chronic enlargement or abscess of the liver due to the influence of the marshes or to a long stay in a hot climate.
34. Cachexia due to life in the marshes with deterioration of the constitution and enlargement of the viscera, or nephritis, or dropsy.
35. An extensive ventral hernia or eventration.
36. Faecal fistula from traumatic causes.
37. Constriction or prolapsus of the rectum; incurable fistula of the anus, following wounds or diarrhea or dysentery in hot climates.
38. Nephritis or purulent cystitis, stone in the bladder or kidney; fistula of the bladder or urethra, incurable constriction or irremediable loss of tissue of the urethra, causing incontinence or retention of the urine, due to traumatic causes.
39. Loss of the penis, or loss or destruction of both testicles (from traumatic causes).
40. Abscess from symptomatic congestion of an incurable lesion of the spine or pelvis from traumatic causes or fatigues of service.
41. Complete impotence of a limb resulting from paralysis of traumatic origin, rheumatic or other; muscular atrophy of rheumatic or other origin, chronic suppurative arthritis of a main joint, of rheumatic or other origin; deformity or ankylosis of the joints following chronic rheumatism or retraction of the muscles and tendons or from cicatricial adhesions; a considerable deviation or shortening as a result of a fracture badly healed or an operative resection; pseudoarthrosis following a fracture or a resection; chronic generalized periosteomyelitis, from traumatic causes; a dislocation of a main articulation without reduction; diffuse aneurism or an extensive arteriovenous aneurism caused by a wound.
42. Complete ankylosis of the shoulder; of the elbow in extension; of the hip, flexed or with a deviation of the leg; of the knee flexed; of the foot badly twisted or dislocated (resulting from resection, or from rheumatic or other affection resulting from fatigues of service).
43. Permanent flexion or extension of all the fingers of the hand from traumatic causes or an affection contracted in service.
44. Simultaneous loss of thumb and index finger with or without the loss of the corresponding metacarpals.
45. Loss of three fingers with their metacarpals; of the four last fingers of the hand; of two fingers with a limitation of movement or a deviation of the remaining fingers and atrophy of the hand.
46. Loss of the first two metatarsals or of the last three metatarsals.

## CLASS VI.

47. Extensive, painful, contracted, ulcerated or adhesive scars of deeper tissues or organs, or those accompanied with muscular hernia causing a serious limitation of function in whatever part of the body.
48. Persistent fistula caused by necrotic or carious periostitis of traumatic origin.

49. Tumors of various sorts which cause serious functional disturbances and are manifestly the result of trauma suffered in service.
50. Pronounced diminution of hearing in both ears, or complete deafness in one ear with facial paralysis or destruction of the external ear resulting from a wound or a disease contracted in service.
51. (Unnecessary. It concerns loss of sight in one eye which, by decision of Mar. 1, 1907, has been listed in Class V, No. 21.)
52. Inguinal or crural hernia (one or both sides) when it is irreducible or presents unusual difficulties in its mastery.
53. Extensive and permanent hemorrhoids causing weakening of the constitution and developed during a stay in a hot climate.
54. Hydrocele or hematocoele grown incurable by the thickening of the tunica vaginalis or by any other complication, originating in a traumatism attributable to the service.
55. Marked or serious varices, complicated with permanent edema, with pronounced trophic disturbance or with ulcers; obstructed veins.
56. Incomplete paralysis or atrophy of one limb from trauma, rheumatism (sciatic or other), attributable to fatigues of service.
57. Partial deviation and partial retraction of a limb by muscular contraction or paralysis, adhesive scars, or cicatricial bands.
58. Irregular misshapen calluses with a superposition of one bone on another, or a malposition, osteitis or cicatricial adhesions resulting from a fracture of the long bones of the limbs, the bones of the pelvis, or the shoulder blade, and causing a considerable limitation of function.
59. Nonsuppurative chronic arthritis of a main articulation (of traumatic, rheumatic, or other origin) attributable to fatigues or dangers of service.
60. Complete ankylosis of the elbow flexed; of the wrist with limitation of the movements of pronation and supination and of the fingers; of the hip with the leg straight; of the knee in extension; of the foot deformed, enlarged, or atrophied, and limited in the free motion of the toes (as a result of traumatism, of resection, or of an affection—rheumatic or other—caused by the fatigues of service).
61. Unreduced dislocation of the wrist or of the bones of the instep, when they produce a serious limitation of function.
62. Unreduced dislocation of the thumb or of the great toe, accompanied by cicatricial adhesions and by stiffness of the other fingers and toes.
63. Permanent flexion or extension of three fingers, a limitation of movement in the other fingers, and atrophy of the hand and forearm.
64. Loss of the thumb with or without loss of its metacarpal.
65. Loss of two fingers, with loss at the same time of the corresponding metacarpals; of two fingers, with stiffness of the remaining fingers. All other analogous mutilation of the hand involving a serious limitation of function.
66. Loss of all the toes of one foot; of the first metatarsal and the great toe; of two other metatarsals.

#### REFERENCES.

Bulletin des Lois du Royaume de France, IX<sup>e</sup> série, tome II, Paris, 1831.

Bulletin des Lois de l'Empire Français, XI<sup>e</sup> série, tome VII, Paris, 1856.

Journal Officiel de la République Française, Paris.

Duvergier. Collection Complète des Lois, Décrets, Ordonnances et Règlements, Paris.

Duvergier. Législation de la Guerre de 1914, Paris.

Dallop. Guerre de 1914, Documents Officiel, Textes Législatifs et Règlementaires, Paris.

Ministère de l'Armement et des Fabrications de la Guerre. Bulletin des Usines de Guerre, Paris.

Bulletin du Ministère du Travail et de la Prévoyance Sociale, Paris.

Bulletin Officiel du Ministère de la Guerre, Paris.

Pour Obtenir une Pension Militaire. Paris, Léon Parisot, Editions et Librairies, 1915.

#### ABBREVIATIONS.

J. O. Journal Officiel (daily edition).

J. O. ch. dép. doc. sess. ord. Journal Officiel, Chambre des Députés, Documents; session ordinaire.

J. O. sén. déb. Journal Officiel, Sénat, Débats.

Bull. du min. du travail. Bulletin du Ministère du Travail et de la Prévoyance Sociale.

Bull. off. min. de la guerre. Bulletin officiel du Ministere de la Guerre.

Dallop. Dallop. Guerre de 1914, Documents Officiels, Textes Législatifs et Règlementaires.

#### GERMANY.<sup>1</sup>

##### PROVISIONS FOR DEPENDENTS OF MEN IN ACTIVE SERVICE.

###### SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.<sup>2</sup>

Separation allowances are paid to members of soldiers' families<sup>3</sup> on a scale varying according to the season. Minimum allowances paid to the wife are 15 marks (\$3.57) monthly from May to October, inclusive, and to other dependents 7.50 marks (\$1.79) monthly. From November to April, inclusive, the minimum allowances are 20 marks (\$4.76) to the wife and 10 marks (\$2.38) to other dependents.

Minimum allowances are paid from the imperial treasury. All sums in addition to the minimum allowances prescribed are granted from the local treasuries.

<sup>1</sup> The German material was prepared by Miss Marguerite D. Darkow.

<sup>2</sup> Latest status, January, 1917, according to laws of Jan. 21, 1916, and Dec. 3, 1916. (Reichsgesetzblatt, 1916, pp. 55, 1323.)

<sup>3</sup> Separation allowances are granted in case of need to families of members of the reserves, Landwehr, complementary reserves (Ersatzreserve), Seewehr, Landsturm, of men on leave of absence at the disposition of the marine division of troops, of war volunteers above the age limit for compulsory service, and under personnel of the voluntary medical corps; to families of men legally obliged to serve in active service; of men who on account of the war have been unable to return home, provided it seems plausible that they have been prevented by imprisonment, civil or military, in enemy countries; of men who at the age for compulsory military service are detained in neutral countries and on account of enemy measures are unable to return home; of men who at the age for compulsory military service have been carried off by the enemy; of members of active troops who have finished their time of active service in peace time and have been placed in the reserves; of men (17 to 20 years of age) not yet obliged to serve who have volunteered or been drafted; of war volunteers who are in no way bound to the army; of soldiers discharged as being permanently unserviceable; of women in the under personnel of the voluntary medical corps. This includes practically all the fighting men of Germany, excepting levied recruits on leave of absence, men who are entered as volunteers under certain conditions, and war volunteers not yet 17 years old.

The persons entitled to allowances are the following:

Wife.

Separated wife..... If she is innocent and husband is obliged to pay maintenance. Law does not state whether amount of allowance for full wife or for other dependent is granted; probably the latter.

Legitimate child..... Under 15 years of age.

Illegitimate child..... If the father's obligation to support the child has been established.

Illegitimate child of wife  
brought into marriage,  
although her husband  
is not the father.

Child over 15 years of age.

Orphan grandchild under  
15 years of age.

Orphan grandchild over  
15 years of age.

Stepchild.

Foster child adopted be-  
fore the war.

Relative of husband in  
ascending line.

Relative of wife in as-  
cending line.

Sister or brother.

Step-parent.

Step brother or sister.

Foster parent adopted be-  
fore the war.

If formerly supported by the soldier or if the need of  
maintenance first appeared after he entered the service.

The allowance to ascendants or collaterals is the same no matter  
how many sons or brothers are in the field.

No separation allowance is granted except in case of need. The  
law of January 21, 1916, states that maintenance is to be paid if  
the total income of the soldier and his family is placed by the last  
assessment of taxes at 1,500 marks (\$357.30) or less, or 1,200 marks  
(\$285.84) or less, or 1,000 marks (\$238.20) or less, according to the  
size of the community in which the family lives.

If the actual income of a person applying for maintenance is essen-  
tially higher or lower than that of the class in which the family is  
rated for the purpose of taxation, or if no such rating has been made,  
the distributive agencies (Lieferungsverbände) fix the figure at which  
the family income shall be rated for determining the applicant's  
eligibility. By determination of the central authorities (Landes-  
zentralbehörde) this is true also for those federated States in which  
income tax is not collected. As a rule no claim upon maintenance  
exists if the income of the soldier's family has not decreased or if  
other facts justify the assumption that maintenance is unnecessary.  
A little property or capital should not, however, interfere with the

grant. "It is not in accordance with the spirit of the law that the family should first use up its own small property."

The sums of money specified in the schedule *must* be paid to the beneficiaries by the distributive agencies, no matter what private allowances (whether of money, food, or what not) or State allowances (e. g., to relatives or State employees) are given. Wherever these sums of money are inadequate to enable the beneficiaries to maintain a modest mode of living or to provide the necessities of life, the distributive agencies are supposed to give additional sums of money or supplies. Each agency has a commission which decides in each case on the need of the claimants and the amount of relief to be given. It may demand data from the local authorities on the circumstances of individual families.

Citizenship in Germany is not essential to the payment of the separation allowance. Thus the needy illegitimate child of a man fighting under the German colors receives the allowance even if it has Austrian citizenship by its mother. Thus, also the mother, supported by a German soldier, receives the allowance, even if she has become an Austrian.

Application is made by the family to the community magistrate or to the subcommittee of the soldier's usual residence. Here the matters of right to allowance, relationship, need, previous support, etc., are examined. The application is then laid before the suitable committee of the distributive agency, which makes the final decision. All expedition is used and questions not immediately pertinent are abandoned.<sup>1</sup>

Allowances are paid twice a month in advance, from the time of mobilization to the time of the soldier's return; payment is not interrupted for the time spent by the soldier at home on sick leave.

If the soldier becomes a deserter or is sentenced to a six-months' prison term or to a severer punishment, the payment of allowances is suspended until he reenters service.

If the soldier dies in service or is reported missing, the allowance is continued to the family until the army unit to which he belonged is either brought to its peace footing or is dissolved, unless his survivors are entitled to a dependents' pension. In such case the separation allowances are continued for three months after the time when the survivors' pension becomes due.<sup>2</sup> The allowances paid during these three months are considered advance payments on account of the survivors' pension, and are subtracted therefrom.

According to the *Soziale Praxis* (Jan. 6, 1916, p. 323) the wages of soldiers<sup>3</sup> reported captured or missing are paid to the soldier's family

<sup>1</sup> Laws of Feb. 28, 1888; Aug. 4, 1914; Jan. 21, 1916; Dec. 3, 1916 (R. G. Bl. 1888, p. 59; 1914, p. 322; 1916, pp. 55, 1323).

<sup>2</sup> Law of Sept. 30, 1915, R. G. Bl. 1915, p. 629; law of May 17, 1907, R. G. Bl. 1907, p. 214.

<sup>3</sup> According to Rimrod, *Was muss jeder Kriegsteilnehmer von der Kriegsversorgung wissen?* (Muenchen, 1915) the war pay of the private soldier amounts to 15.90 marks (\$3.78) a month.

provided the family is receiving the maintenance allowance from the Government. Nephews or nieces may also receive this money if the soldier captured or missing was their chief or whole support.

#### ASSIGNED PAY.<sup>1</sup>

Men in army service may during the war assign part of their pay to their families, either in regular monthly or in lump-sum payments. Pay may be assigned, however, only when it is necessary to help support the family.

The maximum assigned pay for commissioned officers is seven-tenths of their war pay and for noncommissioned officers and privates seven-tenths of their wages according to rank. The minimum pay of a private soldier is 15.90 marks (\$3.78) per month. Unmarried men may assign their pay only if members of their families at home are dependent on them. The sole beneficiaries are wife and children and such members of the family as were wholly or chiefly supported by the soldier.

Monthly payments are made either by local banks or by postal money order, and continue when the soldier is captured by the enemy, missing, or sick in a hospital.

#### INDEMNITY TO FAMILIES FOR SONS IN THE ARMY, NAVY, OR COLONIAL FORCES.<sup>2</sup>

By a decree of March 26, 1914 (R. G. Bl., 1914, p. 57), an indemnity was granted to families whose sons (legitimate or illegitimate before the law), by serving their two or three years' time of active service in the army, navy, or colonial forces, had served six years altogether as noncommissioned officers or privates. Thus, to take the simplest case, two sons might have served three years each. For every further year of service of any of its sons in the same rank of service (Dienstgrad) the family receives on application an annual indemnity of 240 marks (\$57.17). In the case of service in the colonial forces, the indemnity is paid even if the beneficiaries are not living in the colonies.

The beneficiaries are (a) parents; if these are not living, (b) grandparents, but only if they are unable to work and were permanently supported by the soldier up to the time of his enlistment. In the case of grandparents, the years of service must be those of sons of the same son of the grandparent. If there are step-parents, their claim precedes that of grandparents, but depends, as with grandparents, upon their having been permanently supported by the soldier up to the time of his enlistment. In the case of step-parents, the times of

<sup>1</sup> The treatment of this subject is taken from M. Adam, *Das Militärversorgungsrecht*, etc., Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1916, pp. 322-328.

<sup>2</sup> Source: M. Adam, *Das Militärversorgungsrecht*, etc., Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1916, pp. 362-367.

service of full and half brothers are counted together. The time of service is counted from the day of enlistment to the day of dismissal, but a leave of absence of more than three months is excluded.

Application must be made for the indemnity to the magistrate of the community in which the beneficiary has his usual residence. From him it passes to a lower administrative authority, who examines into the time of service of the sons and the troops to which they belonged. Finally, the central authorities of the State (Landeszentralbehörde) receive the application, decide whether or not to grant it, and give notice for payment to an appropriate bank. The payments, based on a monthly sum of 20 marks (\$4.76) are made twice a year—on April 1 and October 1.

The claim upon this indemnity ceases six months after the son is dismissed from the service or dies. Payment is discontinued (a) if and while the son, before the end of his legally required time of active service, is on leave of absence; (b) if he is absent from duty for longer than four weeks; (c) if he is punished by imprisonment of more than six weeks. In the second case, if no guilt on his part is proved, the omitted payments are refunded. In either the second or the third case, if he is absent from service for more than 10 days in any one month, payment for that month is cut off.

#### MATERNITY BENEFITS.<sup>1</sup>

The maternity benefits granted under the imperial insurance code of 1911 have been extended by the laws of December 3, 1914, January 28, 1915, and April 23, 1915,<sup>2</sup> to include:

1. Wives of men who are performing military, medical, or similar service in the war for the Empire, or who are prevented therefrom or from again pursuing a wage-earning occupation by death, injury, sickness, or capture, provided they were insured against sickness in accordance with the imperial insurance code or in a miners' sickness insurance fund at least 26 weeks in the 12 months preceding their entrance into the service, or at least 6 weeks immediately before the same time.

2. Wives of men who belong, or did belong until the outbreak of the war or after, to the paid crews of German ships and who are not insured against sickness according to section 165, paragraph 1, No. 7, of the imperial insurance code; who receive not more than 2,500 marks (\$595.50) per year compensation; and who are performing military, medical, or similar service in the war for the Empire or are prevented therefrom or from again pursuing a wage-earning occupation by death, injury, sickness, or capture.

<sup>1</sup> A very condensed statement based on M. Adam, *Das Militärversorgungsrecht*, etc., Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1916, pp. 368-386.

<sup>2</sup> R. G. Bl., 1914, p. 492; 1915, pp. 49, 257.

3. Wives of men who are performing military, medical, or similar service in the war for the Empire, or who are prevented therefrom or from again pursuing a wage-earning occupation by death, injury, sickness, or capture, provided the wives are in needy circumstances (minder bemittelt), that is, (a) if they receive separation allowance; or (b) if the total income of wife and husband in the fiscal year before his entrance into the service did not exceed 2,500 marks (\$595.50); or (c) if the income remaining to the wife after the husband has entered the service does not exceed 1,500 marks (\$357.30) or, if she has already  $x$  living children under 15 years, does not exceed 1,500 marks plus 250 $x$  marks (\$357.30 + \$59.55 $x$ ). Mothers of illegitimate children receive the maternity benefits, provided the child receives separation allowance.

4. Pregnant women who belong, or did belong until the outbreak of the war or after, to the paid crew of a German ship and who are not insured against sickness according to section 165, paragraph 1, No. 7, of the imperial insurance code also receive the maternity benefits, if the women have no claim upon this grant through their husbands.

The maternity benefits consist of:

(a) A single contribution to the expenses of confinement, 25 marks (\$5.95).

(b) A lying-in grant of 1 mark (24 cents) per day, including Sundays and holidays, for 8 weeks, 6 of which must be after confinement.

(c) Contribution up to 10 marks (\$2.38) for midwife and doctor if necessary, prior to time of confinement.

(d) Nursing premiums to mothers while they nurse their babies, one-half mark (12 cents) per day, including Sundays and holidays, until the twelfth week after confinement.

The benefits are distributed by the sickness insurance fund to which the husband last belonged, but if the woman herself is insured in another insurance fund of this type, the latter pays the benefits. The woman applies to the distributive agency (Lieferungsverband), or to a sickness insurance fund if she belongs to one. Maternity benefits and separation allowances are paid in the same place. If no separation allowance is drawn, the maternity benefit is paid at the end of every week.

The constitution of the individual sickness insurance fund may decide whether free treatment by midwife and doctor, as well as medicine, are to be given instead of the first and third benefits mentioned above. If women are entitled to the lying-in benefit by section 195 of the imperial insurance code of 1911, but not through their husbands, the sickness insurance fund must pay benefits *a*, *b*, and *c* out of its own means. Otherwise the grants are refunded by the Government.

PENSIONS.<sup>1</sup>

## DISABILITY PENSIONS.

(1) *Disability pensions* are granted according to rank, salary, length of service, and extent of disability. Officers' disability pensions increase after the tenth year of service, and in certain cases may be supplemented by additional allowances (accessory pension in case of need and during indigence) until the pension reaches a certain limiting sum. For noncommissioned officers and privates, the disability pension depends upon the extent of disability, and is increased for those who according to budget received a pensionable bonus, such as good conduct pay. (A "pensionable" sum of money is a sum which is used as the basis or part basis of the sum on which the pension is calculated.) The minimum pension for total disability for a private is 540 marks (\$128.63).

(2) *A mutilation bonus* is provided for all officers and soldiers for the loss of (or serious disturbance in the functioning of) a foot, a leg, a hand, an arm, speech, hearing (both ears), one eye if the other is impaired, or such injury to health that nursing is needed. This bonus is doubled in case of loss of sight (both eyes), and may be increased to the double amount if the beneficiary is permanently confined to bed or suffers from some mental disorder. The bonus is between two and three times as large for officers as it is for noncommissioned officers and privates. Officers: 900 marks (\$214.38), 1,800 marks (\$428.76); noncommissioned officers and privates: 324 marks (\$77.18), 648 marks (\$154.36).

(3) *A war bonus*<sup>2</sup> is provided for persons entitled to a pension on account of an injury received in war. This is from four to seven times as high for an officer (720 marks or 1,200 marks—\$171.50 or \$285.84) as it is for a noncommissioned officer or a private (180 marks—\$42.88).

(4) *An old-age bonus* is provided for recipients of the war or aviation bonus who are over 55 years of age (or under if they are completely unfit for work), provided their total income is under 3,000 marks (\$714.60) a year for an officer, and 600 marks (\$142.92) a year for

<sup>1</sup> The German pension system depends upon three basic laws: Law of May 31, 1906, on the pensions of officers (including medical officers) of the army, navy, and colonial forces (R. G. Bl. 1906, p. 565); law of May 31, 1906, on the pensions of persons of lower rank in the army, navy, and colonial forces (R. G. Bl. 1906, p. 593); law of May 17, 1907, on the pensions of dependents of members of the army, navy, and colonial forces (R. G. Bl. 1907, p. 214). In addition there are various amendments which are (except where otherwise specified) embodied in the schedules: (a) Law of June 29, 1912, providing pensions for aeronauts and their dependents (R. G. Bl. 1912, p. 415); (b) law of July 3, 1913, increasing a few of the figures in the second pension law of May 31, 1906 (R. G. Bl. 1913, p. 496); (c) law of Aug. 4, 1914, providing war pensions for certain officials of the civil administration and their dependents (R. G. Bl. 1914, p. 335); (d) law of June 9, 1916, changing a few regulations for the suspension of pensions as given in the first pension law of May 31, 1906 (R. G. Bl. 1916, p. 492); (e) law of July 11, 1916, concerning the indemnification of beneficiaries by capital in place of the war pension (R. G. Bl. 1916, p. 680).

<sup>2</sup> Of the war bonus, the aviation bonus, the Tropics bonus, and the accessory pension for climate and shipwreck, no two may be granted simultaneously.

a noncommissioned officer or a private. The bonus raises their total income to these specified sums.

(5) *An aviation bonus*<sup>1</sup> is provided for persons entitled to a pension on account of an injury received in aviation.

(6) *An accessory pension*<sup>1</sup> for foreign climate and shipwreck is granted to members of the Navy and colonial forces. The amounts of (5) and (6) are the same as those granted for war bonus.

(7) *A Tropics bonus*<sup>1</sup> is granted to members of the colonial forces who have become entitled to a pension on account of the extraordinary influences of the climate during a sojourn in the colonies, or as a result of the peculiar perils of the colonial service. This bonus is from two to four times as high for officers as for noncommissioned officers and privates, and increases with increasing time of service in the colonies.

(8) *A certificate showing claim to a post in the civil service* is granted on retirement to disabled noncommissioned officers and privates, in addition to the disability pension, but only if they appear worthy and serviceable to the superior officials. Otherwise, in certain cases, a yearly indemnity is provided for this certificate. Or the beneficiary may choose to exchange this certificate for the yearly indemnity or for a single sum of money 3,000 marks (\$714.60) if useful expenditure is guaranteed.

(9) *A service pension* of lifelong duration, increasing with years of service, is provided for noncommissioned officers and privates who have served over 18 years and are not entitled to a disability pension.

Salary on basis of which pension is calculated includes the following:

*For the Army.*

(a) Officers: 1. Salary according to pay roll (compare Schedule 16). For lieutenants the salary of infantry lieutenants only, with the exception of lieutenants of artillery, depot pyrotechnics, fortifications, train depot, and manager of the corps of cadet with the rank of officer. 2. Lodging allowance; or, if lodging is provided by the service, its equivalent in money as stated in the pay roll. 3. Contributions of 500 marks (\$119.10) for officers, from commander of brigade (inclusive) down, for servants' wages. 4. Supplementary allowances, according to pay roll for officers from commander of brigade (inclusive) up. If these amount to more than 900 marks (\$214.38), only two-thirds of the amount are included. 5. For lieutenants (second and first): Right to eat at officers' mess, valued at 108 marks (\$25.73); right to hospital care, 100 marks (\$23.82). In time of war the pensionable income is that of the peace rank which corresponds to the

<sup>1</sup> Of the war bonus, the aviation bonus, the Tropics bonus, and the accessory pension for climate and shipwreck, no two may be granted simultaneously.

war rank last held by the officer. The same is true after the war. In case the disability is due to war, and a higher pensionable income had not been attained in time of peace, the former is used as the basis of pension calculation.

(b) Officers of the Army reserves: Pensionable income of infantry of the same rank.

(c) Officials in Army: Lowest income of corresponding peace time rank, or income of rank actually occupied or promoted to in peace time, if the income of this rank is higher. This holds also after the war, if the disability is due to the war.

(d) Officials of the Army reserves: Income of corresponding peace time rank; where several salaries go with a rank, the highest is chosen.

(e) Officials of the civil administration, and the churches in the Army: Income of the civil position last held in peace time.

*For the Navy.*

(a) Officers: 1. Salary according to pay roll. 2. For officers from vice admiral (inclusive) down: The lodging allowance, or, if lodging is supplied, its equivalent in money according to pay roll. 3. For officers from rear admiral (inclusive) down; allowance for servant 500 marks (\$119.10). 4. For officers from rear admiral (inclusive) up: Supplementary allowances. If these are over 900 marks (\$214.38), only two-thirds of the amount is included. 5. Additions to salary (Besoldungszuschuss): If over 900 marks (\$214.38), only two-thirds counts. 6. For first and second lieutenants: 108 marks (\$25.73) for right to eat at officers' mess; 100 marks (\$23.82) for right to hospital care. 7. For medical officers the additions for length of service and voyage bonuses are included.

(b) Deck officers (noncommissioned officers): 1. Salary according to pay roll. 2. Bonus for sea voyages and specialists' bonus, drawn on leaving service. 3. Right to accommodation in hospital, 100 marks (\$23.82).

(c) For all other officers and officials of the Navy and Naval reserves, same as for corresponding officers and officials in the Army or Army reserves.

*For the Colonial Forces.*

The income on the basis of which pensions are calculated is the pensionable income of the corresponding rank in the Army or Navy. In the case of officials, if there is no corresponding rank in the Army or Navy, the imperial chancellor fixes the amount of the pensionable income and pension.

*Minimum disability pension for a private.*—If the working ability of a private who is under 55 years of age is decreased 10 per cent by an injury sustained in the service (but not in time of war or as a result

of aviation), he receives on retirement a yearly pension of 54 marks (\$12.86) as long as his fitness for work remains decreased 10 per cent. Since he has not been mutilated, he receives no mutilation bonus. If he appears unworthy or unserviceable in the eyes of the superior officials, he receives no certificate showing claim to a post in the civil service and no indemnity for the loss of this certificate.

*Maximum disability pension for a private.*—(a) If the private's ability to work is decreased 100 per cent on account of an injury sustained in the service, he receives on retirement a yearly pension equal to 540 marks (\$128.63). If the injury is a major mutilation, such as the loss of sight (both eyes), the private receives 648 marks (\$154.35) a year mutilation bonus in addition; and if the injury was received in war or aviation, he receives the war or aviation bonus of 180 marks (\$42.88). He will probably not be granted the certificate showing claim to a post in the civil service, because he will hardly appear competent to the superior officials. In the case of a private during his first enlistment, the law provides no indemnity for the loss of this certificate. Total pension, 1,368 marks (\$325.86) per year.

(b) If the private has reenlisted and receives an injury in the service which decreases his working ability 100 per cent he receives on retirement a yearly pension of 540 marks (\$128.63). If the injury is a major mutilation—loss of sight (both eyes), the private receives 648 marks (\$154.35) mutilation bonus. Moreover, if the injury was received in war or aviation he is entitled to the war or aviation bonus of 180 marks (\$42.88) yearly. He is not granted the certificate showing a claim to a post in the civil service, because of incompetence; but because he has served 12 years he receives instead an indemnity of 240 marks (\$57.17) per year, which is granted because he is a reenlisted private. Total pension, 1,608 marks (\$383.03) per year.

The mutilation bonus in cases (a) and (b) may be larger. Thus a man may receive for the loss of 2 arms and 2 legs (or 2 hands and 2 feet) 4 times 324 marks (\$77.18), or 1,296 marks (\$308.71); for the loss of speech, 324 marks (\$77.18); for the loss of hearing (both ears), 324 marks (\$77.18); in all, 1,944 marks (\$463.06). This will make the total pension (a) equal 3,312 marks (\$788.92); (b), 3,552 marks (\$846.09).

SCHEDULE 15.—*Germany. Pensions for disability or service.*

## A. COMMISSIONED OFFICERS OF THE ARMY, NAVY, AND COLONIAL FORCES.

Key: S equals pensionable salary (see p. 83, 85). I equals income after leaving the service. M. equals marks, German monetary unit, equivalent to \$0.2382.

[Source: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, p. 565; 1912, p. 415; 1914, p. 335.]

[Amounts followed by M. are in marks; other amounts are in dollars.]

Pensions, annual amounts, granted <sup>2</sup> as—

Beneficiaries <sup>1</sup> having salary equivalent to that of—	Disability pension <sup>3</sup>			Mutilation bonus <sup>4</sup>			Additional bonus (alternatives).			Allowance in case of need to unpensioned officers. <sup>5</sup>
	After 10 years' service or less. <sup>6</sup>	Increase for each year in excess of 10. <sup>6</sup>	Maximum.	Accessory pension in case of need. <sup>6,7</sup>	Minor.	Major.	War or aviation. <sup>8</sup>	Climate or ship-wreck (navy only). <sup>10</sup>	Tropics (colonial forces only). <sup>11</sup>	
Regimental commander, or higher.	33½% of S	13½% of S	75% of S	900 M. (214, 38)	1,800 M. (428, 76)	720 M. (171, 50)	720 M. (171, 50)	720 M. (171, 50)	3,000 M.—I (714, 60—I)	Max., 33½% of S
Officers lower than regimental commander and higher than captain.	32½% of S	13½% of S	75% of S	900 M. (214, 38)	1,800 M. (428, 76)	720 M. (171, 50)	720 M. (171, 50)	720 M. (171, 50)	3,000 M.—I (714, 60—I)	Max., 33½% of S
Captain . . . . .	33½% of S	13½% of S	75% of S	Max., 2,400 M.—I (571, 68—I)	900 M. (214, 38)	1,800 M. (428, 76)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	Min., 1,200 M. (285, 84)	Max., 33½% of S
First lieutenant . . . . .	33½% of S	13½% of S	75% of S	Max., 1,800 M.—I (428, 76—I)	900 M. (214, 38)	1,800 M. (428, 76)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	Min., 1,200 M. (285, 84)	Max., 33½% of S
Second lieutenant . . . . .	33½% of S	13½% of S	75% of S	Max., 1,200 M.—I (285, 84—I)	900 M. (214, 38)	1,800 M. (428, 76)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	1,200 M. (285, 84)	Min., 1,200 M. (285, 84)	Max., 33½% of S

(For footnotes see pages 81-82.)

SCHEDULE 15.—Germany. *Pensions for disability or service—Continued.*B. ARMY.<sup>14</sup> NONCOMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND PRIVATES.

Key: *cB* equals pensionable active service bonus for good conduct. *I* equals income from all sources after leaving the service. *M* equals marks, the German monetary unit, equivalent to \$0.2352. *n* equals years of service in excess of 18 years.

[Sources: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, p. 593; 1912, p. 416; 1913, p. 496.]

[Amounts followed by *M.* are given in marks; other amounts are given in dollars.]

Pension for injury sustained in the service.						
Beneficiaries.	Disability pension. <sup>15</sup>	Accessory pension based on good conduct bonus— <i>cB</i> .		Additional bonus <sup>8</sup>		Money granted in place of civil service certificate on retirement. <sup>16</sup>
		Minor.	Major.	War or aviation. <sup>9</sup>	Tropics (colonial forces only). <sup>11</sup>	
Privates in army and personnel of voluntary medical corps (unless of higher military rank). Noncommissioned officers in Army:						
Corporal . . . . .	540 M. (128, 63) or less.	75% of <i>cB</i>	324 M. (77, 18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).
Sergeant . . . . .	600 M. (142, 92) or less.	75% of <i>cB</i>	324 M. (77, 18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).
Sergeant major . . . . .	720 M. (171, 50) or less.	75% of <i>cB</i>	324 M. (77, 18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).
Reenlisted soldiers:						
Private . . . . .	900 M. (214, 38) or less.	75% of <i>cB</i>	324 M. (77, 18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).
Corporal . . . . .	540 M. (128, 63) or less.	75% of <i>cB</i>	324 M. (77, 18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).
						Service pension for life, independent of disability. <sup>17</sup>
						Extra allowance (temporary). <sup>18</sup>
						Old-age bonus (discretionary). <sup>19</sup>
						Maximum, 270 M. (64, 31).

Sergeant.....	720 M. (171, 50) or less.	75% of CB (77.18)	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).	600 M.—I (142, 92—I)	240 M. (57, 17)	360 M. + 21.6u M. (85.73 + 5.15u) maximum, 720	Maximum, 720 M.—I (171, 50—I).
Sergeant major.....	900 M. (214, 38) or less.	75% of CB (77.18)	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154, 35)	180 M. (42, 88)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).	600 M.—I (142, 92—I)	240 M. (57, 17)	360 M. + 27u M. (107.19 + 6.43u) maximum, 900	Maximum, 900 M.—I (214, 38—I).
Officials of rank of noncommissioned officers and privates.	{(1e)}	{324 M. (77.18)}	324 M. (77.18)	300 M. (71, 46)	Minimum, 300 M. (71, 46).	900 M.—I (214, 38—I)	{(1e)}	{(1e)}	{(1e)}	{(1e)}
Superintendents attached to cadet corps with rank of noncommissioned officers.										

(For footnotes see pages 81-82.)

SCHEDULE 15.—Germany. *Pensions for disability or service—Continued.*C. NAVY.<sup>14</sup> NONCOMMISSIONED OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN.

Key: *CB* equals pensionable active service bonus for good conduct. *SB* equals pensionable active service bonus for specialized skill. *TB* equals pensionable active service bonus for sea voyages. *I* equals income from all sources after leaving the service. *M* equals marks, the German monetary unit, equivalent to \$0.2382. *n* equals years served in excess of 18 years.

[Source: Reichsgesetzblatt 1906, p. 583; 1912, p. 415; 1913, p. 496.]

Pension for injury sustained in the service.							
Beneficiaries.	Accessory pensions based on active service bonuses.			Mutilation bonus. <sup>8</sup>			Old-age bonus (discretionary). <sup>7,12</sup>
	Disability pension. <sup>15</sup>	Good conduct <i>CB</i> .	Increase for time of service <i>TB</i> . <sup>19</sup>	Increase for sea voyages <i>SB</i> . <sup>19</sup>	Minor.	Major.	
Privates in navy and personnel of voluntary medical corps (men of higher rank) and cabin boys. <sup>20</sup>	540 M. (128.63) or less.	75% of <i>CB</i>	.....	.....	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154.35)	War or aviation. <sup>9</sup>
Non commissioned officers of navy (other than deck officers). <sup>13</sup>	600 M. (142.92) or less.	75% of <i>CB</i>	.....	.....	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154.35)	Climate or shipwreck. <sup>10</sup>
Corporal. ....	720 M. (171.50) or less.	75% of <i>CB</i>	.....	.....	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154.35)	Tropics (colonial forces only). <sup>11</sup>
Sergeant. ....	900 M. (214.38) or less.	75% of <i>CB</i>	.....	.....	324 M. (77.18)	648 M. (154.35)	.....
Mate. ....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
							Money granted in place of civil-service certificate on retirement. <sup>16</sup>
							Extra allowance (temporary). <sup>18</sup>
							Maximum, 360 M. (64.36).

Reenlisted sailors:								
Private.....	540 M. (128.63) or less.	75% of CB	75% of TB	75% of VB	75% of SB	324 M. (77.18)	180 M. (42.88)	Minimum, Maximum, Marinum, (128.63- <i>J</i> )
Corporal.....	600 M. (142.92) or less.	75% of CB	75% of TB	75% of VB	75% of SB	324 M. (77.18)	180 M. (42.88)	Minimum, Maximum, (142.92- <i>J</i> )
Sergeant.....	720 M. (171.50) or less.	75% of CB	75% of TB	75% of VB	75% of SB	324 M. (77.18)	180 M. (42.88)	Minimum, Maximum, (171.50- <i>J</i> )
Mate.....	900 M. (214.38) or less.	75% of CB	75% of TB	75% of VB	75% of SB	324 M. (77.18)	180 M. (42.88)	Minimum, Maximum, (214.38- <i>J</i> )
Officials of rank equivalent to non- commissioned offi- cers and privates. Navy employees of military profession ranking as reen- listed.								
(lc)								
(lc)								

<sup>1</sup> Beneficiaries are (a) officers of the active services, including medical officers and naval engineers, or (b) officers of the reserves, if they have seen active service in the reserves, or if they have left reserves unpensioned and are temporarily re drafted into active service, provided disability is incurred in course of duty, or (c) officials of the Army, Navy, or Colonial Forces and officials of the reserves. Officials receive pension for disability under the provisions for disability of civil officials (not shown here), but in addition they are eligible for the bonuses granted under military pension laws, provided they meet conditions similar to those for officers and privates. These officials include officials of the civil administration and of the church while employed as Army or Navy officials in the active forces during a war, civil officials who are, at the command of their superior, utilized during war to support military measures and are under the orders of the commanding general of the local Army corps; other persons attached to the active Army or Navy as officials in time of war.

<sup>2</sup> The officer receives during the first two months after his disability pension is granted an extra allowance, amounting (Army and Navy) to the difference between his salary (plus his lodging allowance) and his pension, or (Colonial Forces) to the difference between his home furlough pay and his pension. <sup>a</sup> The same amounts granted for a disability pension (without bonus for mutilation, war, etc.) may be paid to an officer who has attained the age of 65 years and applies for retirement, regardless of disability. <sup>b</sup> Also, an officer in the Colonial Forces may receive pension regardless of age after 12 years of service.

<sup>4</sup> Pension is granted during time of disability, but to officers in active Army who have served at least 10 years and who are permanently disabled for active service it is granted for life. The disability for which pension is granted before 10 years of service must have been incurred in the service and in the line of duty. <sup>5</sup> Period of service rendered by a pensioned officer, either (a) in a position under the military or marine budget, or (b) in active service or in military or naval administration because of mobilization, is added to the service period on which his pension is based and entities on which the officer to a proportionate increase. <sup>6</sup> With consent of highest military or marine administrative authority of the contingent or of colonial central administration.

<sup>7</sup> Footnotes continued on p. 82.]

<sup>9</sup> Bonus is granted in addition to disability pension and mutilation bonus if the injury has been incurred in war or aviation. Aviation bonus, war bonus, bonus for climate, shipwreck, and Tropics bonus are not granted simultaneously.

<sup>10</sup> Granted also to members of Army employed on voyages. Persons who may receive this bonus are those entitled to a pension on account of (a) shipwreck while in the service, or military expedition in connection with a voyage in the service, or (b) extraordinary influences of the climate during a sojourn in a non-European land or on a voyage in the service.

In Granted only to members of the Colonial Forces and to the members of Army and Navy who have previously served in Colonial Forces and who have within 10 years of departure from the colonies become permanently unfit for military service either abroad or at home and entitled to a pension on account of an injury sustained in colonial service, because of the extraordinary influences of the climate or as a result of the peculiar perils of provincial service. After the third consecutive year of colonial service, for every extra year (not necessarily consecutive) the Tropics bonus is increased by 16 $\frac{2}{3}$  per cent of the amount stated until this amount is doubled. Persons staying permanently in the colonies who are drilling with the Colonial Forces or who in emergency are drafted as reinforcements into the Colonial Forces are not entitled to the Tropics bonus, nor are those who are serving their required term in these forces.

<sup>12</sup> Granted only to pensioners receiving bonus for war, aviation, or climate or shipwreck who are over 55 years of age, or under 55 if completely and permanently unfit for work.

In In the Navy noncommissioned officers known as deck officers receive pensions indicated for first lieutenant.

<sup>14</sup> Privates, noncommissioned officers, and reenlisted men of the Colonial Forces, in relation to their pensionable status, may be classified as follows: 1. Men who have been transferred from the Army—like the Army, plus Tropics bonus; 2. Men who have been transferred from the Navy—like the Navy, plus Tropics bonus; 3. Men who are serving their required time of active service in the Colonial Forces—like the Army; 4. Men who have been drafted out of the reserves to reinforce the Colonial Forces in case of emergency—like the Army with the addition of the Tropics bonus, unless they are permanently residing in the colony; 5. Men who have reenlisted in the Colonial Forces after serving their required time of active service in the Colonial Forces—like the Army plus Tropics bonus.

<sup>15</sup> If fitness for work is decreased at least 10 per cent by a disability incurred in line of duty a disability pension is granted on retirement and continues so long as disability remains. Amounts granted for total disability; proportionate amounts are granted for partial disability. (See Schedule 20, p. 95.) The reenlisted man who has served at least eight years may be pensioned on the same basis for disability not incurred in line of duty.

<sup>16</sup> Disabled noncommissioned officers and privates who appear worthy and serviceable receive on retirement, in addition to disability pension, a certificate showing claim to a post in the civil service. This may be granted also to any reenlisted soldier who has served 12 years, or who, having served less than 12 years, is disqualified unworthy (unless the unworthiness consists of lack of honor); or he may exchange the certificate for an annuity if, within four years of retirement, no civil-service post is held; or if, instead of annual allowance a lump sum of 3,000 M. (3711.60) if useful expenditure is guaranteed.

<sup>17</sup> Granted to men not receiving a disability pension after 18 years of service. Rate increased by 6 per cent for each additional year of service as, for example, after (18+6) years

<sup>18</sup> Noncommissioned officers and privates leaving service unenlisted with a disability reducing their earning capacity at least 30 per cent may in case of need receive an amount equal to one-half of the disability pension of their grade. The first payment must be made within two years after the man's discharge. The allowance is temporary, but may be granted for one or more years. The reenlisted man who upon discharge receives a civil-service certificate, but who does not immediately find employment, may receive in case of need a temporary allowance during the first year after his discharge. If he is in receipt of a pension the allowance may equal the difference between the total disability pension of his grade and the amount he is receiving.

<sup>19</sup> Maximum allowed as accessory pension for time of service and sea voyages (that is, as 75 per cent of *TB* plus 75 per cent of *VB*) is one-half of pension granted to same grade for total disability.

<sup>20</sup> Cabin boys receive disability pension only if fitness for work is decreased because of war or injury received on voyage.

SCHEDULE 16.—*Germany. Pensionable salaries of officers of the Imperial Army.*

[Schedule according to law of May 31, 1906, R. G. Bl. 1906, p. 565, from M. Adam, *Das Militärversorgungsrecht im Heere, in der Marine und in den Schutztruppen.* Berlin, 1916, pp. 12-13.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses given in marks; amounts inside of parentheses given in dollars.]

Grade.	Salary.	Service allowance (over 900 M. only two-thirds).	Lodging allowance.	Allowance for servant.	Table money.	Hospital fee.	Total.
1. Commanding general.....	{13,980 (3,330.04)	12,000 (2,858.40)	.....	.....	.....	.....	25,980 (6,188.44)
2. Chief of general staff of army, general inspector of cavalry and foot artillery, chief of engineer and pioneer corps, general inspector of fortresses:							
a. With 18,000 M. (4,287.60) service allowance.....	Like 1.	Like 1.	.....	.....	.....	.....	Like 1.
b. With 12,000 M. (2,858.40) service allowance.....	{13,980 (3,330.04)	8,000 (1,905.60)	.....	.....	.....	.....	21,980 (5,235.64)
3. Commander of division with rank of lieutenant general.....	{13,554 (3,228.56)	3,000 (714.60)	1,404 (334.43)	.....	.....	.....	17,958 (4,277.60)
4. Commander of division with rank of major general and general.....	{10,554 (2,513.96)	3,000 (714.60)	1,404 (334.43)	.....	.....	.....	14,958 (3,563.00)
a. Lieutenant general with salary of his rank but without service allowance.....	{13,554 (3,228.56)	.....	1,404 (334.43)	.....	.....	.....	14,958 (3,563.00)
5. Commander of brigade with rank of major general and officer holding position with same income, sanitary inspector.....	{10,260 (2,443.93)	900 (214.38)	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	13,064 (3,111.84)
6. Major general with salary of his rank but without service allowance.....	{10,260 (2,443.93)	.....	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	12,164 (2,897.46)
7. Commander of brigade with rank of colonel.....	{9,060 (2,158.09)	900 (214.38)	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	11,864 (2,826.00)
8. Staff surgeon with rank of regimental commander and officer holding position with same income, surgeon general.....	{8,772 (2,089.49)	.....	1,134 (270.12)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	10,460 (2,478.71)
9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273.93) pensionable allowance and first surgeon general (generaloberarzt) with same allowance.....	{7,702 (1,834.62)	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	9,976 (2,161.90)
10. Staff officer with rank of commander of battalion and officer holding position with same income, first staff surgeon (oberstabsarzt).....	{6,552 (1,560.69)	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	7,926 (1,887.97)
11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department (traindepotofizier), captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon:							
a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary.....	{5,100 (1,214.82)	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	6,474 (1,542.11)
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary.....	{4,600 (1,095.72)	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	5,974 (1,423.01)
c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....	{3,400 (809.88)	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	4,774 (1,137.17)

SCHEDULE 16.—*Germany. Pensionable salaries of officers of the Imperial Army—Con.*

Grade.	Salary.	Service allowance (over 900 M. only two-thirds).	Lodging allowance.	Allowance for servant.	Table money.	Hospital fee.	Total.
12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major:							
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....	{ 2,400 (571.68)		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	3,486 (830.37)
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.....	{ 2,100 (500.22)		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	3,186 (758.91)
c. With 1,900 M. (452.58) salary.....	{ 1,900 (452.58)		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,986 (711.27)
d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.....	{ 1,700 (404.94)		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	103 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,786 (663.63)
e. With 1,500 M. (357.30) salary.....	{ 1,500 (357.30)		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	103 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,586 (615.99)
13. First surgeon (oberarzt), assistant surgeon:							
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....	Like 12 a.						
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.....	Like 12 b.						
c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.....	Like 12 d.						
14. Second officer of supply department:							
a. With 3,200 M. (762.24) salary.....	{ .....		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	4,178 (995.20)
b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary.....	{ .....		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	4,028 (959.47)
c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	{ .....		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,878 (923.74)
d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary.....	{ .....		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,728 (888.01)
e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	{ .....		378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,578 (852.28)
15. First lieutenant, lieutenant of artillery, pyrotechnics, fortress construction:							
a. With 3,100 M. (738.42) salary.....	{ 3,100 (738.42)		546 (130.06)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	4,246 (1,011.40)
b. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	{ 2,900 (690.78)		546 (130.06)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	4,046 (963.76)
c. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	{ 2,600 (619.32)		546 (130.06)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,746 (892.30)
d. With 2,300 M. (547.86) salary.....	{ 2,300 (547.86)		546 (130.06)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,446 (820.84)
e. With 2,000 M. (476.40) salary.....	{ 2,000 (476.40)		465 (110.76)	500 (119.10)	100 (23.82)	100 (23.82)	3,146 (749.33)

SCHEDULE 17.—*Germany. Pensionable salaries of officers and petty officers of the Imperial Navy.*<sup>1</sup>

[Schedule according to law of May 31, 1906, R. G. Bl. 1906, p. 565, from M. Adam, *Das Militärversorgungsrecht im Heere, in der Marine, und in den Schutztruppen*. Berlin, 1916, pp. 36-37.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Salary.	Service allowance (if over 900 M. only two-thirds).	Extra pay.	Lodging allowance.	Allowance for servant.	Table money.	Hospital fee.	Total
1. Admiral.....	{ 13,980 (3,330.01)	12,000 (2,858.40)	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	25,980 (6,188.41)
2. Vice admiral, staff surgeon general of Navy as soon as he is given rank of vice admiral.....	{ 13,554 (3,228.56)	3,000 (714.60)	.....	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	17,958 (4,277.60)
3. Rear admiral (as chief of the Navy cabinet, or as department director).....	{ 10,260 (2,443.93)	3,000 (714.60)	294 (70.03)	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	15,458 (3,682.10)
4. Staff surgeon general of Navy .....	{ 10,260 (2,443.93)	3,000 (714.60)	.....	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	15,164 (3,612.06)
5. Rear admiral with rank of station chief.....	{ 10,260 (2,443.93)	900 (214.38)	294 (70.03)	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	13,358 (3,181.88)
6. Rear admiral.....	{ 10,260 (2,443.93)	900 (214.38)	.....	1,404 (334.43)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	13,064 (3,111.84)
7. Naval captain, inspector of marine infantry, surgeon general.....	{ 8,772 (2,089.49)	.....	.....	1,134 (270.12)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	10,406 (2,478.71)
8. Captain of frigate, chief surgeon general (Generaloberarzt), with bonus.....	{ 6,552 1,150 (273.93)	.....	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	9,076 (2,161.90)
9. Captain of frigate, chief surgeon general without bonus, captain of corvette, commander of sea battalion, chief staff surgeon.....	{ 6,552 (1,560.69)	.....	.....	874 (268.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	7,926 (1,887.97)
10. Lieutenant captain, captain, staff surgeon, lieutenant captain of pyrotechnics, lieutenant captain of torpedoes:								
a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary.	{ 5,100 (1,214.82)	.....	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	6,474 (1,542.11)
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary.	{ 4,600 (1,095.72)	.....	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	5,974 (1,423.01)
c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary..	{ 3,400 (809.88)	.....	.....	874 (208.19)	500 (119.10)	.....	.....	4,774 (1,137.17)
11. First lieutenant, second lieutenant:								
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.	{ 2,400 (571.68)	.....	.....	378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	3,486 (830.37)
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.	{ 2,100 (500.22)	.....	.....	378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	3,186 (758.91)
c. With 1,900 M. (452.58) salary.	{ 1,900 (452.58)	.....	.....	378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,986 (711.27)
d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..	{ 1,700 (404.94)	.....	.....	378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,786 (663.63)
e. With 1,500 M. (357.30) salary..	{ 1,500 (357.30)	.....	.....	378 (90.04)	500 (119.10)	108 (25.73)	100 (23.82)	2,586 (615.99)

<sup>1</sup> For officers of the medical corps there are in addition the bonuses for length of service and for voyages, drawn at sailing, and for the Navy engineers the bonus for voyages.

SCHEDULE 17.—*Germany. Pensionable salaries of officers and petty officers of the Imperial Navy—Continued.*

Grade.	Salary.	Service allowance (if over 900 M. only two-thirds).	Extra pay.	Lodging allowance.	Allowance for servant.	Table money.	Hos-pital fees.	Total.
12. Chief assistant surgeon, assistant surgeon:								
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.	Like 11 a							
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.	Like 11 b							
c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.	Like 11 d							
13. First lieutenant and second lieutenant of pyrotechnics and torpedoes:								
a. With 3,100 M. (738.42) salary.	3,100 (738.42)		546	500		100	4,246	
b. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.	2,900 (690.78)		546	500		100	4,016	
c. With 2,700 M. (643.14) salary.	2,700 (643.14)		546	500		100	3,846	
d. With 2,500 M. (595.50) salary.	2,500 (595.50)		546	500		100	3,616	
14. Chief engineer of Navy, with bonus.	7,302 (1,739.34) 1,150 (273.93)		874	500			9,826	
			(208.19)	(119.10)			(2,340.55)	
15. Chief engineer of Navy, without bonus, chief staff engineer of navy (oberstabsingenieur), chief staff engineer of torpedo corps.	7,302 (1,739.34)		874	500			8,676	
			(208.19)	(119.10)			(2,066.62)	
16. Staff engineer of Navy, staff engineer of torpedoes.	6,800 (1,619.76)		874	500			8,174	
			(208.19)	(119.10)			(1,947.05)	
17. First engineer of Navy, first engineer of torpedoes.	5,200 (1,238.64)		378	500		100	6,178	
			(90.04)	(119.10)		(23.82)	(1,471.60)	
18. Engineer of Navy, engineer of torpedoes.	4,200 (1,000.44)		378	500		100	5,178	
			(90.04)	(119.10)		(23.82)	(1,233.40)	
19. First petty officer (Deck-offizier).	1,2,580 (613.56)					100	2,680	
						(23.82)	(638.38)	
20. Petty officer.	1,2,100 (500.22)					100	2,200	
						(23.82)	(524.04)	

<sup>1</sup> And the voyage and specialist's bonus drawn at sailing.

## SCHEDULE 18.—Germany. Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included.

[Source: M. Adum, *Das Militärvorsorgerecht im Heere, in der Marine, und in den Schutztruppen*, Berlin, 1916, Appendix I.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Pensionable yearly salary.	Amount of annual pension according to years of service <sup>1</sup> and corresponding fraction of pensionable salary.									
		10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	20
	20/60	21/60	22/60	23/60	24/60	25/60	26/60	27/60	28/60	29/60	30/60
1. Commanding general	{ 25,990 (6,188.44)										
2. Chief of general staff of Army, general inspector of cavalry and foot artillery, chief of the engineer and pioneer corps, general inspector of fortresses:											
a. With 18,000 M. (4,287.60) service allowance	{ Like 1.										
b. With 12,000 M. (2,858.40) service allowance	{ 21,980 (5,235.64)										
3. Division commander with rank of Lieutenant general	{ 17,958 (4,277.60)										
4. Division commander with rank of major general and Lieutenant general with the salary of his grade, but no service allowance	{ 14,958 (3,563.00)										
5. Brigade commander with rank of major general and officer holding position with same income, sanitary inspector	{ 13,064 (3,111.85)										
6. Major general with salary of his grade, but without service allowance	{ 12,164 (2,887.46)										
7. Brigade commander with rank of colonel	{ 11,864 (2,826.09)										
8. Staff officer with rank of regimental commander and officer holding position with like income, surgeon general	{ 10,406 (2,478.71)										
9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273.33) pensionable allowance, and first surgeon general (Generaloberarzt) with same	{ 9,076 (2,161.90)										

<sup>1</sup> For years of service 21 to 30, see p. 90; from 31 to 40, p. 93.4,539  
(1,081.19)

SCHEDULE 18.—Germany. *Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included—Continued.*

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Amount of annual pension according to years of service and corresponding fraction of pensionable salary.										
	10	11	12	13	14	15	16	17	18	19	20
Pensionable yearly salary.	20/60	21/60	22/60	23/60	24/60	25/60	26/60	27/60	28/60	29/60	30/60
10. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon.....	(1,887.97)	2,613 (629.56)	2,775 (661.01)	2,907 (692.45)	3,039 (723.89)	3,171 (755.33)	3,303 (780.77)	3,435 (818.22)	3,567 (849.66)	3,699 (881.10)	3,831 (912.54)
11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department, captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon:											
a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary .....	{ 6,474 (514.11)	2,160 (510.24)	2,268 (566.96)	2,376 (566.96)	2,484 (591.96)	2,592 (617.41)	2,700 (613.14)	2,808 (668.87)	2,916 (694.59)	3,024 (720.32)	3,132 (746.04)
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary .....	{ 5,542 (413.00)	1,932 (474.48)	2,091 (498.08)	2,163 (522.37)	2,292 (545.65)	2,391 (569.51)	2,490 (583.12)	2,589 (616.70)	2,691 (641.00)	2,790 (664.58)	2,889 (688.16)
c. With 3,400 M. (804.88) salary .....	{ 4,774 (1,137.17)	1,593 (379.45)	1,671 (398.03)	1,752 (417.33)	1,833 (436.62)	1,911 (455.20)	1,992 (474.49)	2,070 (493.07)	2,151 (512.37)	2,229 (530.95)	2,310 (550.24)
12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major (10. Art. 2):											
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary .....	{ 3,486 (30.37)	1,164 (277.20)	1,221 (290.84)	1,281 (306.13)	1,338 (318.71)	1,395 (332.29)	1,455 (346.58)	1,512 (360.16)	1,569 (373.74)	1,629 (388.03)	1,686 (401.61)
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary .....	{ 3,186 (758.90)	1,062 (232.97)	1,116 (265.83)	1,170 (278.69)	1,224 (291.56)	1,275 (303.71)	1,329 (316.57)	1,383 (339.43)	1,434 (354.58)	1,488 (373.44)	1,542 (387.74)
c. With 1,900 M. (449.58) salary .....	{ 2,986 (711.27)	996 (237.28)	1,047 (249.40)	1,146 (260.83)	1,095 (272.88)	1,197 (285.13)	1,245 (296.66)	1,296 (308.71)	1,342 (320.14)	1,395 (332.29)	1,454 (344.41)
d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary .....	{ 2,786 (663.63)	930 (221.53)	1,023 (232.96)	1,068 (243.68)	1,116 (254.81)	1,161 (265.83)	1,215 (276.55)	1,264 (287.70)	1,254 (298.70)	1,302 (310.14)	1,347 (320.86)
e. With 1,500 M. (367.30) salary .....	{ 2,586 (615.99)	804 (205.80)	906 (215.81)	931 (226.53)	993 (236.53)	1,035 (246.34)	1,080 (257.20)	1,122 (267.26)	1,164 (277.26)	1,200 (287.98)	1,251 (297.99)
13. First surgeon, assistant surgeon:											
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary											
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary											
c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary											

Like 12.  
a, b, c.

## 14. Second officer of supply department:

a. With 3,200 M. (762.24) salary.....	4,178	1,395	1,464	1,533	1,602	1,674	1,743	1,812	1,881	1,950	2,022	2,091
(993.20)	(332.29)	(348.72)	(361.60)	(375.16)	(381.50)	(398.75)	(415.18)	(431.62)	(448.05)	(464.49)	(481.44)	(498.08)
b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary.....	4,028	1,344	1,410	1,479	1,545	1,614	1,680	1,746	1,815	1,881	1,947	2,016
(939.47)	(320.11)	(335.86)	(352.30)	(368.02)	(384.45)	(400.16)	(415.90)	(432.33)	(448.05)	(463.51)	(478.05)	(480.21)
c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	3,878	1,293	1,359	1,422	1,488	1,554	1,617	1,683	1,746	1,812	1,875	1,941
(923.71)	(307.99)	(323.71)	(338.72)	(354.44)	(370.16)	(385.17)	(400.89)	(415.90)	(431.62)	(446.63)	(462.35)	(476.33)
d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary.....	3,728	1,245	1,305	1,368	1,431	1,494	1,554	1,617	1,680	1,740	1,803	1,866
(888.01)	(296.56)	(310.85)	(325.86)	(340.86)	(355.87)	(370.16)	(385.17)	(400.18)	(414.47)	(429.47)	(444.48)	(459.48)
e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	3,578	1,194	1,254	1,314	1,374	1,434	1,491	1,551	1,611	1,671	1,731	1,791
(852.28)	(284.41)	(298.70)	(312.99)	(327.29)	(341.16)	(355.16)	(369.45)	(383.74)	(398.03)	(412.32)	(426.62)	(436.62)

## 15. First lieutenant and second lieutenant of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction:

a. With 3,100 M. (738.42) salary.....	4,246	1,416	1,488	1,557	1,629	1,697	1,770	1,842	1,911	1,983	2,055	2,124
(1,011.40)	(337.29)	(354.44)	(370.88)	(388.03)	(405.18)	(421.61)	(438.76)	(455.30)	(472.35)	(489.30)	(506.94)	(520.05)
b. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	4,046	1,350	1,419	1,485	1,551	1,620	1,686	1,755	1,821	1,890	1,956	2,025
(963.76)	(321.57)	(338.01)	(353.73)	(369.45)	(385.88)	(401.61)	(418.04)	(433.76)	(450.20)	(465.92)	(482.36)	(498.36)
c. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	3,716	1,251	1,314	1,374	1,437	1,500	1,563	1,626	1,686	1,749	1,812	1,875
(802.30)	(297.99)	(312.99)	(327.29)	(342.49)	(357.30)	(372.34)	(387.31)	(401.61)	(416.61)	(431.62)	(446.63)	(460.63)
d. With 2,300 M. (547.86) salary.....	3,446	1,149	1,209	1,266	1,323	1,380	1,437	1,494	1,551	1,611	1,668	1,725
(820.84)	(273.69)	(287.98)	(301.56)	(316.14)	(328.72)	(342.29)	(355.87)	(369.45)	(383.74)	(397.32)	(410.90)	(426.90)
e. With 2,000 M. (476.40) salary.....	3,146	1,050	1,104	1,155	1,206	1,260	1,311	1,365	1,416	1,470	1,531	1,575
(749.38)	(250.11)	(262.97)	(278.12)	(287.27)	(300.13)	(312.23)	(325.14)	(337.29)	(350.15)	(362.30)	(375.17)	(382.30)

**SCHEDULE 18.—Germany.** *Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included—Continued.*

Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Pensionable yearly salary.	Amount of annual pension according to years of service and corresponding fraction of pensionable salary.								
		21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29
	31/60	32/60	33/60	34/60	35/60	36/60	37/60	38/60	39/60	40/60
1. Commanding general.....	{ 25,980 (6,188, 44)									{ 17,322 (4,126, 10)
2. Chief of general staff of Army, general inspector of cavalry and foot artillery, chief of the engineer and pioneer corps, general inspector of fortresses; a. With 15,000 M. (4,285, 50) service allowance. [Like 1.]	{ 21,980 (5,235, 64)									{ 14,655 (3,490, 52)
b. With 12,000 M. (2,858, 40) service allowance.....	{ 17,958 (4,277, 60)									{ 11,973 (2,851, 97)
3. Division commander with rank of lieutenant general.....										
4. Division commander with rank of major general and lieutenant general with the salary of his grade but no service allowance.....	{ 14,958 (3,563, 00)									{ 9,972 (2,375, 33)
5. Brigade commander with rank of major general and officer holding position with same income, sanitary inspector.....	{ 13,064 (3,111, 65)									{ 8,712 (2,075, 20)
6. Major general with salary of his grade but without service allowance.....	{ 12,164 (2,897, 46)									{ 8,112 (1,932, 28)
7. Brigade commander with rank of colonel.....	{ 11,884 (2,826, 00)									{ 7,911 (1,881, 40)
8. Staff officer with rank of regimental commander and officer holding position with like income, surgeon general.....	{ 10,406 (2,478, 71)									
9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273, 93) pensionable allowance, and first surgeon general (General Oberarzt) with same.....	{ 9,076 (2,161, 90)	{ 4,692 (1,117, 63)	{ 4,842 (1,153, 36)	{ 4,992 (1,180, 09)	{ 5,145 (1,225, 54)	{ 5,295 (1,261, 27)	{ 5,448 (1,297, 71)	{ 5,598 (1,333, 44)	{ 5,751 (1,369, 89)	{ 5,901 (1,403, 62)
10. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon.....	{ 7,926 (1,887, 97)	{ 4,098 (976, 14)	{ 4,098 (1,007, 59)	{ 4,230 (1,039, 03)	{ 4,362 (1,070, 47)	{ 4,494 (1,101, 91)	{ 4,758 (1,133, 36)	{ 4,890 (1,164, 80)	{ 5,022 (1,196, 24)	{ 5,154 (1,227, 68)
11. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon.....	{ 7,926 (1,887, 97)	{ 4,098 (976, 14)	{ 4,098 (1,007, 59)	{ 4,230 (1,039, 03)	{ 4,362 (1,070, 47)	{ 4,494 (1,101, 91)	{ 4,758 (1,133, 36)	{ 4,890 (1,164, 80)	{ 5,022 (1,196, 24)	{ 5,154 (1,227, 68)

## 11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department, captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon:

a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary.....	3,474 (1,512.11)	3,345 (796.78)	3,453 (822.30)	3,561 (848.23)	3,669 (873.90)	3,777 (899.68)	3,885 (925.41)	3,993 (931.13)	4,101 (976.86)	4,209 (1,002.58)	4,317 (1,028.31)
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary.....	5,974 (1,423.00)	3,087 (735.32)	3,189 (759.62)	3,288 (783.37)	3,387 (806.20)	3,486 (830.37)	3,585 (857.53)	3,684 (887.53)	3,785 (901.83)	3,885 (925.41)	3,984 (948.99)
c. With 3,400 M. (809.58) salary.....	4,774 (1,137.17)	2,469 (588.12)	2,547 (606.70)	2,628 (625.99)	2,706 (644.57)	2,787 (663.86)	2,865 (682.44)	2,946 (701.74)	3,024 (720.32)	3,105 (739.61)	3,153 (758.19)
12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major (10, Abd. 2):											
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....	3,486 (830.37)	1,803 (429.47)	1,860 (443.05)	1,920 (457.34)	1,977 (470.92)	2,034 (484.50)	2,094 (498.79)	2,151 (512.37)	2,208 (525.95)	2,268 (540.94)	2,325 (553.82)
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.....	3,186 (758.90)	1,647 (392.32)	1,701 (405.18)	1,755 (418.04)	1,806 (430.19)	1,860 (443.05)	1,914 (455.91)	1,965 (468.06)	2,019 (480.93)	2,073 (493.79)	2,124 (505.93)
c. With 1,900 M. (419.58) salary.....	2,986 (711.27)	1,593 (348.02)	1,641 (373.45)	1,695 (391.60)	1,743 (403.75)	1,794 (415.91)	1,842 (427.33)	1,893 (438.76)	1,941 (450.91)	1,992 (474.49)	2,041 (491.80)
d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.....	2,786 (683.63)	1,440 (343.10)	1,483 (344.44)	1,533 (363.16)	1,581 (376.73)	1,626 (387.31)	1,674 (398.73)	1,719 (409.47)	1,767 (420.90)	1,812 (431.62)	1,860 (445.05)
e. With 1,500 N. (357.30) salary.....	2,586 (615.99)	1,338 (318.71)	1,425 (328.72)	1,487 (339.44)	1,525 (339.44)	1,567 (349.44)	1,594 (359.44)	1,638 (369.17)	1,683 (380.17)	1,725 (390.17)	1,775 (410.90)
13. First surgeon, assistant surgeon:											
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....											
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.....											
c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.....											
14. Second officer of supply department:											
a. With 2,200 M. (762.24) salary.....	4,178 (935.20)	2,160 (514.51)	2,229 (530.95)	2,295 (547.39)	2,370 (564.41)	2,439 (580.97)	2,508 (597.41)	2,577 (613.84)	2,649 (630.98)	2,718 (647.33)	2,787 (663.80)
b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary.....	4,028 (959.47)	2,082 (512.37)	2,151 (528.09)	2,217 (543.83)	2,283 (560.12)	2,352 (576.31)	2,418 (592.97)	2,484 (609.69)	2,553 (626.12)	2,619 (640.28)	2,688 (656.56)
c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	3,878 (923.74)	2,004 (477.55)	2,070 (493.07)	2,133 (508.08)	2,199 (523.80)	2,265 (539.52)	2,338 (554.33)	2,394 (570.25)	2,457 (585.26)	2,523 (600.92)	2,586 (615.99)
d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary.....	3,728 (888.01)	1,952 (474.49)	1,989 (473.78)	2,052 (488.79)	2,116 (503.09)	2,238 (523.09)	2,302 (533.09)	2,364 (548.10)	2,424 (563.10)	2,487 (577.40)	2,549 (592.40)
e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	3,578 (852.28)	1,831 (455.20)	1,911 (466.78)	1,968 (488.37)	2,028 (501.37)	2,083 (518.37)	2,148 (531.37)	2,208 (546.95)	2,268 (560.24)	2,328 (584.33)	2,388 (608.82)
15. First lieutenant and second lieutenant of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction:											
a. With 3,100 M. (738.42) salary.....	4,246 (1,011.40)	2,196 (523.69)	2,265 (539.32)	2,337 (556.67)	2,409 (573.26)	2,478 (590.26)	2,550 (607.41)	2,619 (623.85)	2,691 (641.43)	2,760 (657.43)	2,832 (674.53)
b. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....	4,046 (963.76)	2,091 (498.08)	2,160 (514.51)	2,226 (530.23)	2,295 (546.67)	2,361 (562.39)	2,430 (578.83)	2,496 (594.55)	2,565 (610.98)	2,631 (626.70)	2,700 (643.14)
c. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	3,746 (802.30)	1,938 (461.63)	1,998 (475.92)	2,061 (500.93)	2,124 (520.94)	2,187 (535.95)	2,250 (550.96)	2,313 (565.25)	2,373 (580.26)	2,436 (595.26)	2,499 (613.26)
d. With 2,300 M. (547.56) salary.....	3,446 (820.84)	1,732 (424.47)	1,806 (438.05)	1,896 (451.63)	1,953 (465.20)	2,013 (479.50)	2,070 (493.07)	2,127 (506.65)	2,184 (520.23)	2,241 (535.81)	2,298 (547.38)
e. With 2,000 M. (476.40) salary.....	3,146 (749.38)	1,626 (387.31)	1,680 (400.18)	1,731 (412.32)	1,785 (425.19)	1,836 (437.34)	1,890 (450.20)	1,941 (462.35)	2,046 (475.21)	2,100 (487.33)	2,160 (500.22)

SCHEDULE 18.—Germany. *Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included—Continued.*

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Amount of annual pension according to years of service and corresponding fraction of pensionable salary.									
	31	32	33	34	35	36	37	38	39	40
Pension- able salary.	\$1/120	\$2/120	\$3/120	\$4/120	\$5/120	\$6/120	\$7/120	\$8/120	\$9/120	\$45/60
1. Commanding general.....	25,980 (6,188.44)	17,538 (4,177.55)	17,754 (4,229.00)	17,970 (4,280.45)	18,186 (4,331.91)	18,405 (4,384.07)	18,621 (4,435.52)	18,837 (4,486.97)	19,053 (4,538.42)	19,269 (4,589.88)
2. Chief of general staff of Army, general inspector of cavalry and foot artillery, chief of the engineer and pioneer corps, general inspector of fortresses:										19,485 (3,926.73)
a. With 18,000 M. (4,287.60) service allowance.....	21,980 (5,235.64)	14,838 (3,534.41)	15,021 (3,578.00)	15,204 (3,621.89)	15,387 (3,665.18)	15,570 (3,708.77)	15,753 (3,752.36)	15,936 (3,796.96)	16,119 (3,839.55)	16,302 (3,883.14)
b. With 12,000 M. (2,868.40) service allowance.....	17,958 (4,277.60)	12,123 (2,887.70)	12,273 (2,922.43)	12,423 (2,959.16)	12,573 (2,994.89)	12,723 (3,030.62)	12,870 (3,065.63)	13,020 (3,101.36)	13,170 (3,137.09)	13,320 (3,172.82)
3. Division commander with rank of lieutenant general.....	14,938 (3,563.00)	10,098 (2,405.34)	10,224 (2,435.36)	10,347 (2,464.66)	10,473 (2,494.67)	10,596 (2,523.97)	10,722 (2,553.98)	10,845 (2,583.28)	10,971 (2,613.29)	11,104 (2,642.59)
4. Division commander with rank of major general and lieutenant general with the salary of his grade but no service allowance.	13,064 (3,111.88)	8,820 (2,100.92)	8,928 (2,126.65)	9,036 (2,152.38)	9,147 (2,178.82)	9,265 (2,204.54)	9,363 (2,230.27)	9,474 (2,256.71)	9,582 (2,282.43)	9,690 (2,308.16)
5. Brigade commander with rank of major general and officer holding position with same income, sanitary inspector.	12,164 (2,897.46)	8,211 (1,935.86)	8,313 (1,980.16)	8,415 (2,004.45)	8,517 (2,028.75)	8,619 (2,053.05)	8,718 (2,076.63)	8,820 (2,100.92)	8,922 (2,125.22)	9,024 (2,149.52)
6. Major general with salary of his grade but without service allowance.	11,864 (2,826.00)	8,010 (1,907.98)	8,109 (1,931.56)	8,208 (1,935.15)	8,307 (1,978.73)	8,406 (2,002.31)	8,505 (2,025.89)	8,604 (2,049.47)	8,703 (2,073.05)	8,802 (2,096.64)
7. Brigade commander with rank of colonel.....	10,466 (2,478.71)	7,026 (1,673.59)	7,113 (1,694.32)	7,200 (1,715.04)	7,287 (1,735.76)	7,371 (1,755.77)	7,458 (1,776.50)	7,545 (1,797.22)	7,632 (1,817.94)	7,719 (1,838.67)
8. Staff officer with rank of regimental commander and officer holding position with like income, surgeon general.										7,806 (1,859.39)

9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273.93) { (2,161.90) (1,477.79) 9,076 6,204 6,354 6,507 6,657 6,807  
general allowance, and first surgeon general (Generaloberarzt) with same.

10. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon.  
a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary.....  
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary.....  
c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....

11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department, captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon:  
a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary.....  
b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary.....  
c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....

12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major (10, Abt. 2):  
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....  
b. With 2,100 M. (300.22) salary.....  
c. With 1,900 M. (449.58) salary.....  
d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary.....  
e. With 1,500 M. (357.30) salary.....

13. First surgeon, assistant surgeon:  
a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary.....  
b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary.....  
c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..... Like 12, a, b, c..

14. Second officer of supply department:  
a. With 3,200 M. (762.24) salary.....  
b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary.....  
c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary.....  
d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary.....  
e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....

	41/60	42/60	43/60	41/60	45/60
9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273.93) { (2,161.90) (1,477.79) 9,076 6,204 6,354 6,507 6,657 6,807 general allowance, and first surgeon general (Generaloberarzt) with same.	(1,513.32)	(1,549.97)	(1,583.70)	(1,621.43)	
10. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon. a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary..... b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary..... c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....	(1,887.97)	(1,290.57)	(1,322.01)	(1,333.45)	(1,384.89) (1,416.34)
11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department, captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon: a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary..... b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary..... c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....	(1,512.11)	(1,054.04)	(1,079.76)	(1,105.49)	(1,131.21) (1,156.94)
12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major (10, Abt. 2): a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary..... b. With 2,100 M. (300.22) salary..... c. With 1,900 M. (449.58) salary..... d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..... e. With 1,500 M. (357.30) salary.....	(574.94)	(41.083)	(4,425)	(4,533)	(4,641) (4,749) (4,857)
13. First surgeon, assistant surgeon: a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary..... b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary..... c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..... Like 12, a, b, c..	(758.90)	(618.80)	(522.26)	(486.15)	(502.45) (518.61) (534.80)
14. Second officer of supply department: a. With 3,200 M. (762.24) salary..... b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary..... c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary..... d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary..... e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	(1,187.17)	(777.48)	(796.06)	(815.36)	(833.94) (853.23)
9. Commissioned lieutenant colonel with 1,150 M. (273.93) { (2,161.90) (1,477.79) 9,076 6,204 6,354 6,507 6,657 6,807 general allowance, and first surgeon general (Generaloberarzt) with same.	(1,513.32)	(1,549.97)	(1,583.70)	(1,621.43)	
10. Staff officer with rank of battalion commander and officer holding position with same income, head staff surgeon. a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary..... b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary..... c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....	(1,887.97)	(1,290.57)	(1,322.01)	(1,333.45)	(1,384.89) (1,416.34)
11. Captain, cavalry captain, first officer of supply department, captain of artillery, pyrotechnics, and fortress construction, staff surgeon: a. With 5,100 M. (1,214.82) salary..... b. With 4,600 M. (1,095.72) salary..... c. With 3,400 M. (809.88) salary.....	(1,512.11)	(1,054.04)	(1,079.76)	(1,105.49)	(1,131.21) (1,156.94)
12. First lieutenant, second lieutenant, lieutenant sergeant major (10, Abt. 2): a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary..... b. With 2,100 M. (300.22) salary..... c. With 1,900 M. (449.58) salary..... d. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..... e. With 1,500 M. (357.30) salary.....	(574.94)	(41.083)	(4,425)	(4,533)	(4,641) (4,749) (4,857)
13. First surgeon, assistant surgeon: a. With 2,400 M. (571.68) salary..... b. With 2,100 M. (500.22) salary..... c. With 1,700 M. (404.94) salary..... Like 12, a, b, c..	(758.90)	(618.80)	(522.26)	(486.15)	(502.45) (518.61) (534.80)
14. Second officer of supply department: a. With 3,200 M. (762.24) salary..... b. With 3,050 M. (726.51) salary..... c. With 2,900 M. (690.78) salary..... d. With 2,750 M. (655.05) salary..... e. With 2,600 M. (619.32) salary.....	(1,187.17)	(777.48)	(796.06)	(815.36)	(833.94) (853.23)

**SCHEDULE 18.—Pensionable salaries of Army officers and the annual amounts of pension due them, bonuses not included—Continued.**

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

SCHEDULE 19.—*Germany.* Service pensions for noncommissioned officers.

Source: M. Adam, *Das Militärvorsorgungsrecht im Heere, in der Marine, und in den Schutztruppen*, Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1918, pp. 56-57.]

Annual service pension according to length of service and corresponding fraction of pension for total disability.

Grade of pensioner.	18	19	20	21	22	23	24	25	26	27	28	29	30	31	32	33	34	35
Sergeant major.....	50/100	53/100	56/100	59/100	62/100	65/100	68/100	71/100	74/100	77/100	80/100	83/100	86/100	89/100	92/100	95/100	98/100	100/100
Sergeant.....	{ 450 (107,19)	{ 477 (113,82)	{ 504 (120,05)	{ 531 (126,48)	{ 558 (132,92)	{ 585 (139,35)	{ 612 (145,78)	{ 639 (152,21)	{ 666 (158,64)	{ 693 (165,07)	{ 720 (171,50)	{ 747 (177,94)	{ 774 (184,37)	{ 801 (190,80)	{ 828 (197,23)	{ 855 (203,60)	{ 882 (210,00)	{ 900 (214,38)
Under officer (corporal).....	{ 360 (65,75)	{ 381 (70,90)	{ 403 (96,04)	{ 424 (101,19)	{ 446 (106,33)	{ 468 (111,48)	{ 489 (116,62)	{ 511 (121,77)	{ 532 (126,91)	{ 554 (132,06)	{ 576 (137,20)	{ 597 (142,35)	{ 619 (147,49)	{ 640 (152,64)	{ 662 (157,78)	{ 684 (162,93)	{ 705 (168,07)	{ 720 (171,50)
	{ 300 (71,46)	{ 318 (75,75)	{ 336 (80,04)	{ 354 (84,32)	{ 372 (88,61)	{ 390 (92,90)	{ 408 (97,19)	{ 426 (101,47)	{ 444 (105,76)	{ 462 (110,05)	{ 480 (114,34)	{ 506 (118,62)	{ 524 (122,91)	{ 552 (127,20)	{ 570 (131,49)	{ 598 (135,77)	{ 618 (140,06)	{ 642 (142,92)

SCHEDULE 20.—Germany. *Pensions for partial disability for noncommissioned officers and enlisted men.*

[Source: M. Adam, *Das Militärsorgungswesen im Heere, in der Marine, und in den Schutztruppen*, Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1916, pp. 56-57.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Annual disability pension according to percentage of disability (loss of earning power).									
Grade of pensioner.									
10/100	15/100	20/100	25/100	30/100	33½/100	35/100	40/100	45/100	50/100
Sergeant major.....	135 (21.44)	180 (32.16)	225 (42.88)	270 (53.60)	300 (64.31)	315 (71.46)	360 (85.75)	405 (96.47)	450 (107.19)
Sergeant.....	90 (72.72)	144 (17.15)	144 (25.73)	216 (34.30)	240 (51.45)	252 (57.17)	288 (60.03)	324 (68.60)	360 (77.18)
Under officer (corporal).....	60 (14.29)	90 (21.44)	120 (28.58)	150 (35.73)	180 (42.88)	200 (47.74)	210 (50.02)	240 (57.17)	270 (64.31)
Private.....	54 (12.86)	81 (19.29)	108 (25.73)	135 (32.16)	162 (38.39)	180 (42.88)	189 (45.02)	216 (51.45)	243 (57.88)
Annual disability pension according to percentage of disability (loss of earning power).									
60/100	65/100	66½/100	70/100	75/100	80/100	85/100	90/100	95/100	100/100
Sergeant major.....	540 (128.83)	585 (139.35)	630 (142.92)	630 (150.97)	675 (160.79)	720 (171.50)	765 (182.22)	810 (192.94)	855 (203.66)
Sergeant.....	432 (102.90)	468 (111.48)	480 (114.34)	504 (120.65)	540 (128.63)	576 (137.20)	612 (145.78)	648 (154.35)	684 (162.93)
Under officer (corporal).....	300 (85.75)	330 (92.90)	400 (95.33)	420 (100.04)	450 (107.19)	480 (114.34)	510 (121.48)	570 (128.63)	600 (135.77)
Private.....	324 (77.18)	351 (83.61)	360 (86.75)	378 (90.04)	405 (96.47)	432 (102.90)	459 (109.33)	513 (115.77)	540 (128.63)

SCHEDULE 21.—*Germany. The general pension to*

Key: *B* equals pensionable active service bonus or bonuses.<sup>2</sup> *DP* equals disability pension (without monetary unit, equivalent to \$0.2382). *P* equals pension to which deceased was, or would have been, entitled. Minimum for widow's pension is 300M. (871.46).<sup>4</sup> Maximum: Where alternative widow is younger than the deceased. *y* equals number of years in excess of 5 during which widow and served. *u* equals number of years in excess of 18 during which the deceased had served.

[Source: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, p. 565; 1906, p. 593; 1907, p. 214; 1912, p. 415; 1914, p. 335.]

[Amounts followed by M. are in marks; other amounts are in dollars.]

Deceased.	Pension, annual amount to widow until remarriage.		
	If widow is not more than 15 years younger than her husband.		If widow is more than 15 years younger than her husband.
	Minimum. <sup>4</sup>	Maximum.	
Officer (including medical officer) who was at time of death entitled, either actually or in case of retirement, to			Minimum. <sup>4</sup>
a. Life-long pension, or			If marriage lasted 5 years or less.
b. Temporary pension. In case <i>b</i> , the pensioning of the widow, etc., is discretionary. <sup>7</sup>			
Officer (including medical officer) of reserves whose death was due to an injury in the service and who was at time of death entitled to pension, either actually or in case of retirement. Pensioning of the widow, etc., is discretionary. <sup>7</sup>	40% of <i>P</i> .....	{ 5,000 M. (1,191) or 100% of <i>P</i> . }	(40-2x)% of <i>P</i> ....
Retired officer temporarily drafted into active service who had left the service.			
a. Unpensioned, or			
b. Pensioned, <i>provided</i> , in case <i>b</i> , that marriage followed reentrance into active service.			
Pensioning of widow, etc., is discretionary. <sup>7</sup>			
Soldier of lower rank (noncommissioned officer <sup>8</sup> or private) who died			
I. After serving 15 years or less			
a. While in the active service, from any cause, having served at least 10 years, or	300 M. (71.46).....	300 M. (71.46).....	300 M. (71.46).....
b. While in the active service (or within 6 years of leaving active service) from an injury sustained in the service.			
II. After serving <i>z</i> years in excess of 15 years			
a. While in the active service, from any cause.	300 M. +18z M.....	{ 750 M. or 100% of DP. }	{ $\frac{20-x}{20} (300 M. +18z M.)$ .
b. Within 6 years of leaving active service, from an injury sustained in the service.			

<sup>1</sup> The possessions of a deceased member of the Colonial Forces, left behind by him in the colonies may be sent free of charge to the residence of his survivors in the German Empire. Members of the household of the deceased are entitled to free transportation to their homes within a year of his death. See, also, Schedule 23, p. 102.

<sup>2</sup> *B* for the Army and Colonial Forces is only the good conduct bonus. For the Navy it includes also the bonuses for length of service, for sea voyages, and for specialist's skill. The widow receives the stated percentage of the sum of her husband's bonuses, except that the amount allowed to her on this basis may never exceed one-fifth of the pension to which her husband was, or would have been, entitled for total disability (or 20 per cent of *DP*).

<sup>3</sup> In reckoning the 40 per cent of husband's pension to which widow of officer or official is entitled, the amount of the husband's pension does not include his accessory pension for need, nor his bonus for mutilation or for old age. If the widow is entitled to a war pension in addition to her general pension, the amount of her husband's pension which is used as the basis for reckoning her general pension excludes also the bonus which her husband may have received for war, or shipwreck, or Tropics service.

<sup>4</sup> The minimum of 300 M. as indicated suffers no decrease except when the widow and orphans together receive more than the specified maximum general pension. In this case the separate pensions are decreased

widows and children of officers and enlisted men.<sup>1</sup>

bonuses) to which deceased would have been entitled for 100 per cent disability. M. equals marks, German entitled on the day of his death.<sup>3</sup> WP equals pension to which widow of deceased was, or would have maximums are shown the lower amount applies.<sup>5</sup> x equals number of years in excess of 15 by which deceased had been married. z equals number of years in excess of 15 during which the deceased had

[Source: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, p. 565; 1906, p. 593; 1907, p. 214; 1912, p. 415, 1914, p. 335.]

[Amounts followed by M. are in marks; other amounts are in dollars.]

Pension, annual amount to widow until remarriage—Continued.		Pension, annual amount to each child <sup>6</sup> under 18 years of age and unmarried.		Maximum pension, annual amount to whole dependent family.	
Minimum. <sup>4</sup>	Maximum. <sup>5</sup>	If mother is living and entitled to pension.	If mother is dead, or not entitled to pension.		
If marriage lasted $y$ years in excess of 5 years.					
$(40-2x+4y)\% \text{ of } P \dots \dots \dots$	$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 5,000 \text{ M. (1,191) or } 49\% \\ \text{ of } P. \end{array} \right.$	$20\% \text{ of } WP \dots \dots \dots$	$33\frac{1}{3}\% \text{ of } WP \dots \dots \dots$	$100\% \text{ of } P.$	
300 M. (71.46).....	300 M. (71.46).....	60 M. (14.29) ..	100 M. (23.82) ..	100% of DP.	
$\left\{ \begin{array}{l} 20-x+2y \\ 20 \end{array} \right. (300\text{M.}+18z\text{M.})$	300 M. + 18z M. ....	20% of WP ....	$33\frac{1}{3}\% \text{ of } WP \dots \dots \dots$	100% of DP.	

proportionately. If widow and orphans together receive more than the specified maximum and if a decrease in the pension is due in addition because of the widow's comparative youth, the widow's and orphans' pensions are first decreased proportionally so that together they do not exceed the 100 per cent disability pension of the deceased soldier; then the widow's pension is decreased on account of her age, and the sum so deducted from the widow's pension is added to the orphan's pensions until all the pensions together are equal to the 100 per cent disability pension of the deceased. (See p. 106.) If one of the beneficiaries dies, the remaining benefits increase up to their ordinary value, provided the maximum for the whole family is not exceeded.

<sup>5</sup> If in any case the maximum indicated for widow who is not more than 15 years younger than her husband proved to be less than that indicated for the widow who is  $15+x$  years younger than her husband, this smaller maximum would apply to the younger widow.

<sup>6</sup> Legitimate or legitimated.

<sup>7</sup> By consent of the highest military or marine administrative authority of the contingent or of the central colonial administration.

<sup>8</sup> For dependents of noncommissioned officers in the Navy ranking as deck officers pension is reckoned like that for dependents of commissioned officers.

SCHEDULE 21.—*Germany. The general pension to widows*

Deceased.	Pension, annual amount to widow until remarriage.		
	If widow is not more than 15 years younger than her husband.		If widow is more than 15 years younger than her husband.
	Minimum.	Maximum.	Minimum.
Soldier of lower rank, etc.—Continued.			
III. In active service (under conditions I. or II. a) and while in receipt of a pensionable bonus (symbolized by <i>B</i> ): <sup>1</sup>			
a. Having served 15 years or less.	300 M.+15% of <i>B</i> ...	300 M.+20% of <i>DP</i>	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+15% of <i>B</i> ).
b. Having served <i>z</i> years in excess of 15.	300 M.+18z M.+15% of <i>B</i> .	100% of <i>DP</i> +37.5% of <i>B</i> .	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+18z M.+15% of <i>B</i> ).
c. Having served <i>u</i> years in excess of 18 and <i>z</i> years in excess of 15.	300 M.+18z M.+15% of <i>B</i> +9u% of <i>B</i> .	100% of <i>DP</i> +37.5% of <i>B</i> , or 750 M.+30% of <i>B</i> .	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+18z M.+15% of <i>B</i> +9u% of <i>B</i> ).
IV. While entitled to a pension for 18 years of service, from any cause.	300 M.+18z M....	750 M. or 100% of <i>DP</i> or 100% of <i>P</i> .	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+18z M.).
V. While entitled to a pension (from any cause after 18 years of service or from injury sustained in the service) including a pensionable bonus (symbolized by <i>B</i> ):			
a. Having served 15 years or less.	300 M.+30% of <i>B</i> ...	300 M.+20% of <i>DP</i>	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+30% of <i>B</i> ).
b. Having served <i>z</i> years in excess of 15.	300 M.+18z M.+30% of <i>B</i> .	100% of <i>DP</i> +75% of <i>B</i> .	$\frac{20-x}{20}$ (300 M.+18z M.+30% of <i>B</i> ).
Official <sup>1</sup> who died as result of injury sustained in military service and who was entitled to a pension (or would have been entitled on retirement), <i>provided</i> marriage took place before retirement from standing Army. The pensioning of the widow is, however, discretionary. <sup>2</sup>	40% of <i>DP</i> .....	3,500 M. (833.70) or 100% of <i>P</i> .	40% of <i>P</i> —2x% of <i>P</i> .
Member of voluntary medical corps in time of war who died as result of injury in battle within 6 years after conclusion of peace and who was entitled (either actually or in case of retirement) to a pension, <i>provided</i> marriage took place before the end of service on field of battle.	300 M. (71.46).....	3,500 M. (833.70) or 100% of <i>DP</i> .	300 M. (71.46).....

<sup>1</sup> Includes official of reserves, official of civil administration or of the church who acts as official of Army in time of war, or any other person attached to the Army as an official in time of war.

and children of officers and enlisted men—Continued.

Pension, annual amount to widow until remarriage—Continued.		Pension, annual amount to each child under 18 years of age and unmarried.		Maximum pension, annual amount, to whole dependent family.	
If widow is more than 15 years younger than her husband.					
Minimum.	Maximum.	If mother is living and entitled to pension.	If mother is dead, or not entitled to pension.		
If marriage lasted $y$ years in excess of 5 years.					
$20-x+2y$ $20$ (300 M. + 15% of $B$ ). $20-x+2y$ (300 M. + 18z M. + 15% of $B$ ). $20-x+2y$ (300 M. + 18z M. + 15% of $B$ + 0.9u% of $B$ ). $20-x+2y$ (300 M. + 18z M.).	300 M. + 15% of $B$ ..... 300 M. + 18z M. + 15% of $B$ . 300 M. + 18z M. + 15% of $B$ + 0.9u% of $B$ . 300 M. + 18z M. ....	20% of $WP$ .... 20% of $WP$ .... 20% of $WP$ .... 20% of $WP$ ....	33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ... 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ... 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ... 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ...	100% of $DP$ + 37.5% of $B$ . 100% of $DP$ + 37.5% of $B$ . 100% of $DP$ + 37.5% of $B$ . 100% of $DP$ or 100% of $P$ .	
$20-x+2y$ (300 M. + 30% of $B$ ). $20-x+2y$ (300 M. + 18z M. + 30% of $B$ ). 40% of $P$ - 2x% of $P$ + 4y% of $P$ .	300 M. + 20% of $DP$ .... 300 M. + 18z M. + 30% of $B$ . 3,500 M. (833.70) or 40% of $P$ .	20% of $WP$ .... 20% of $WP$ .... 20% of $WP$ ....	33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ... 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ... 33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ...	300 M. + 20% of $DP$ . 100% of $DP$ + 75% of $B$ . 100% of $P$ .	
300 M. - 15x M. + 30y M ..	300 M. (71.46) or 100% of $DP$ .	20% of $WP$ ....	33 $\frac{1}{3}$ % of $WP$ ...	100% of $DP$ .	

SCHEDULE 22.—Germany. War pensions (annual amounts) to widows and other dependents of men dying as result of war.<sup>1</sup>

[Sources: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, pp. 565, 593; 1907, p. 214; 1912, p. 413; 1914, p. 325.]

1 equals income from all sources after the husband's death.

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts within parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries: Widows and other dependents of—	Widow's pension until remarriage.		Pension to each child <sup>2</sup> under 18 and unmarried.		Pension to ascendants (father, mother, grand- father, grand- mother) dependent upon the deceased. <sup>4</sup>
	War pension.	If general pension is not granted.	If mother is living and entitled to pension.	If mother is dead or not entitled to pension.	
Officers, including medical officers, officers of aviation corps, officers of voluntary medical corps, and officials <sup>5</sup> of equivalent rank: <sup>6</sup>					
General, or officer acting as general.....	1,500 M. (357.30)	2,000 M. (476.40)	3,000 M.-I (714.60-I)	150 M. (35.73)	200 M. (53.60)
Staff officer, all ranks below general and above captain.....	1,500 M. (357.30)	1,800 M. (381.12)	2,000 M.-I (476.40-I)	200 M. (47.64)	300 M. (71.46)
Captain, first lieutenant, second lieutenant.....	1,200 M. (285.84)	1,200 M. (285.84)	2,000 M.-I (476.40-I)	200 M. (47.64)	300 M. (71.46)
Warrant officer.....	1,200 M. (285.84)	1,200 M. (285.84)	1,500 M.-I (357.30-I)	200 M. (47.64)	300 M. (71.46)
Noncommissioned officers (except deck officers) and privates, including corresponding ranks in aviation corps and voluntary medical corps, and officials <sup>5</sup> of equivalent rank: <sup>6</sup>					
Sergeant major, vice sergeant major, sergeant with pay of a vice sergeant major, chief guard of voluntary medical corps.....	300 M. (71.46)	600 M. (142.92)	600 M.-I (142.92-I)	108 M. (25.73)	168 M. (40.02)
Sergeant, corporal, deputy chief guard or section leader of voluntary medical corps.....	200 M. (47.64)	500 M. (119.10)	500 M.-I (119.10-I)	108 M. (25.73)	168 M. (40.02)
Private or other person of lower rank of voluntary medical corps.....	100 M. (23.82)	400 M. (95.25)	400 M.-I (95.25-I)	108 M. (25.73)	168 M. (40.02)

<sup>1</sup> Includes *a*. Families of members of active army, navy, or colonial forces, or persons acting as soldiers in time of war who die within 10 years of conclusion of peace from injury received in war. *b*. Families of members of standing army (but not of active army) who, on account of exertions or privations due to war or influences dangerous to health, died within a year of the end of the war. *c*. Families of members of army who were ordered to participate in the war in a foreign army or navy and who died as a result of this service within a year of returning from the peculiar dangers of the service. *d*. Families of members of army, navy, or colonial forces who have become entitled to a pension or who have died in practice of aeronautics as a result of the peculiar dangers of the service. *e*. Families of members of navy (or members of army utilized in voyage) who died in shipwreck or within 10 years of return home or dismissal from service in foreign parts on account of injury received in a shipwreck. Death within 10 years from the extraordinary influence of the climate on a voyage entitles the widow, etc., to war pension (but not to special allowance) provided she had been married at the time of the voyage. *f*. Families of members of the colonial forces who within 10 years after return home or after dismissal from the colonial service die as result of the peculiar perils of colonial service or the extraordinary influences of the climate during a sojourn in the colonies; these are entitled to war pension but not to special allowance.

<sup>2</sup> By consent of the highest military or marine administrative authority of the contingent or of central colonial administration. Allowance equals the difference between the sum stated and the widow's income from all sources (symbolized by *I*).

<sup>3</sup> Legitimate or legitimated.

<sup>4</sup> If deceased, had been their entire or chief support before entering active Army or after leaving active Army until time of last illness or death. For relatives of aviators, only if deceased had been their entire or chief support at the time of his death or before the beginning of his last illness. Amount stated is maximum.

<sup>5</sup> Officials include: *(a)* Officials in the civil administration and the church employed as Army officials in the active Army only during a war; also *(b)* officials of the civil administration who are, at the command of their superior, utilized during war to support military measures and are under the orders of the commanding general of the local Army corps provided these latter (class *b*) have become entitled to pension or have died on account of an injury received during the war in fulfilling their duties; *(c)* any other person attached as an official to the Army or Navy in time of war or serving it on private contract.

<sup>6</sup> Same amounts apply to equivalent ranks in the Navy and colonial forces. Amount of pension, by rank, on behalf of persons not in active Army, Navy, or colonial forces as determined: *(a)* For a person acting as soldier in time of war, by military rank, last held by deceased. *(b)* For other person acting as Army official in time of war or serving it on private contract. If he has been given military rank of lieutenant or higher, the pension is reckoned like that allowed for Army officer whose pensionable income is nearest to pensionable income of the deceased.

<sup>7</sup> Applies also to pension for child of staff officer acting as commander of regiment.

SCHEDULE 23.—*Germany. Gratuities granted to dependents of officers and enlisted men dying in the service or while in receipt of pension.*

[Source: Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, pp. 565, 593; 1907, p. 214.]

Stipulations concerning the deceased.	Beneficiary.					
	Widow.	Legiti- mate or legiti- mated child.	Other dependents if indigent; and if the deceased had been their entire or chief support, or if he does not leave enough money to cover the expenses of his last illness and burial.			
			Relative in ascend- ing line.	Sister or brother.	Nephew or niece.	Foster child.
1. If pensioner, drawing a monthly pension fee of $p$ M; a single grant following his decease. (If this is granted, the dependent's pension begins 3 months after the soldier's death; otherwise on the day after his death, and for posthumous orphans on the day of their birth.)	3p.	3p.	Up to 3p.	Up to 3p.	Up to 3p.	Up to 3p.
2. If unpensioned, drawing a monthly salary of $s$ M, then killed in active service; a single grant following his decease. (In this case, the dependent's pension begins one month after the soldier's death.)	s.	s.	Up to s.	Up to s.	Up to s.	Up to s.
3. If the second case applies, and if the dependent's pension is $d$ M; a single grant in addition to the pension and to the salary.	2s.-2d.	2s.-2d.	Up to 2s.- 2d.	Up to 2s.- 2d.	Up to 2s.- 2d.	Up to 2s.- 2d.
4. If the second case applies, and if the dependents are not entitled to a pension, a single grant in addition to the salary.	2s.	2s.	Up to 2s.	Up to 2s.	Up to 2s.	Up to 2s.

## DEPENDENTS' PENSIONS.

(1) A *general pension* is granted to the widow until she remarries, and to every unmarried legitimate or legitimated orphan under 18 years of age. The amount of the benefit depends upon the years of service of the deceased soldier; the time of his marriage; the duration of his married life; the difference in age between himself and his wife; the pension to which he was entitled on the day of his death or to which he would have been entitled had he then retired; and the pensionable bonus or good-conduct pay he had received.

The widow's pension varies from a minimum of 300 marks (\$71.46) a year to a maximum of 5,000 marks (\$1,191) a year; various other maxima are set, such as the pension to which her husband had been entitled or pension for total disability granted for his rank. Where various maxima are set the lowest is effective.

The child's pension is likewise limited either by the pension to which the father had been entitled, or by the 100 per cent disability pension attached to his rank. The same maximum is set for the whole family of children and widow together. Hence, in case this maximum is exceeded, even when the widow receives the minimum sum of 300 marks (\$71.46), all the benefits (including hers) are proportionately decreased until together they amount to the specified maximum. (See Schedule 21, p. 96.)

(2) The *war pension* is granted if the deceased died in battle or as a result of a wound received in war, or suffered other injury in war and died thereof within 10 years of the conclusion of peace. The widow and each child receive sums of money which vary according to the rank of the deceased, and, so far as the child is concerned, according to whether the child is parentless or only fatherless. If the general pension is not granted these beneficiaries, the war pension is increased sometimes as much as 400 per cent. If the widow's income is less than certain fixed maxima, an accessory allowance may be granted her to raise her income to the desired sum. This occurs especially if the widow is not entitled to war pension for survivors of members of the active army, but if her husband was entitled to a pension, or would have been—had he retired on the day of his death—on account of an injury received in the war.

Relatives in ascending line may be granted a war pension in case of need if the deceased had been their entire or chief support before entering the active army, or after leaving it, up to the time of his last illness or death. (See Schedule 22, p. 100.)

(3) *Gratuities* are granted to families of the deceased so that for 3 months after his death they receive (including the dependents' pensions, if they are entitled to these) sums of money equal to the monthly pension or salary of the deceased. (See Schedule 23, p. 102.)

*Minimum war pension for the widow of a private.*—If the husband died while he was in the standing army after 10 years of service, the widow's general pension is 300 marks (\$71.46). The war pension consists in this case of 100 marks (\$23.82) per year and is granted only if the private died in battle, or as a result of a wound received in war, or suffered other injury in war and died thereof within 10 years of the conclusion of peace. Her total pension is thus 400 marks (\$95.28) a year.

If the general pension is not granted because the soldier served less than 10 years or for some other reason, and the widow is entitled to war pension under the stipulation above mentioned for the award of war pension, her war pension consists of 400 marks (\$95.28). Thus the widow's minimum war pension in either case is 400 marks (\$95.28).

*Maximum pension for the widow of a private.*—The figures in the accompanying table give the widow's general pension, provided the widow is not more than 15 years younger than her husband.

Years of service.	General pension.	Years of service.	General pension.
1 to 15.	300 marks (\$71.46)	23.	444 marks (\$105.76)
16.	318 marks (\$75.75)	24.	462 marks (\$110.05)
17.	336 marks (\$80.04)	25.	480 marks (\$114.34)
18.	354 marks (\$84.32)	26.	498 marks (\$118.62)
19.	372 marks (\$88.61)	27.	516 marks (\$122.91)
20.	390 marks (\$92.90)	28.	534 marks (\$127.20)
21.	408 marks (\$97.19)	29.	540 marks (\$128.63)
22.	426 marks (\$101.47)	30 and more.	540 marks (\$128.63)

If the deceased died of an injury sustained in the service, while in the standing army, or within 6 years of leaving active service, the whole table applies; if the deceased died while in the standing army after 10 years of service, the table applies from the tenth year on. The maximum—attained after 29 years of service—is 540 marks (\$128.63).

If the deceased died in retirement, after at least 18 years of service—entitled to a pension at the time of his death—the above table applies from the eighteenth year on, with the proviso that if the pension to which the deceased had been entitled was less than 540 marks (\$128.63), the widow's pension could not exceed this lower amount.

If the deceased died in battle or as a result of a wound received in war, or suffered other injury in war and died thereof within 10 years of the conclusion of peace (stipulation for the award of war pension), the widow will receive 100 marks (\$23.82) war pension in addition to the general pension. Total, 640 marks (\$152.45) a year.

If the widow is not entitled to the general pension, she receives only 400 marks (\$95.28) per year war pension.

*Minimum war pension for child of a private.*—(a) Child whose mother is living. If the father died after 10 years of service, the child's general pension is 20 per cent of the widow's, i. e., 60 marks (\$14.29). If, in addition, war pension is granted because the father's death was in accordance with the stipulation for the award of war pension above specified, the war pension for the fatherless child is 108 marks (\$25.73); his total pension is therefore 168 marks (\$40.02) per year.

If the general pension is not granted, the fatherless child receives 168 marks (\$40.02) war pension. In either case, therefore, the total pension for the fatherless child is 168 marks (\$40.02) annually.

The general pension of widow and orphan together must not be more than 540 marks (\$128.63). If it is, the general pensions are decreased proportionately, so that together they are equal to 540 marks (\$128.63). If, under these circumstances, a decrease is also due because the widow is more than 15 years younger than her husband, a deduction is next made for this; and the sum so deducted from the widow's pension is added to the child's, until all the general pensions together equal 540 marks (\$128.63).

(b) Full orphan. The full orphan, or the child whose mother is not entitled to the general pension at her husband's death, receives  $33\frac{1}{3}$  per cent of the widow's pension, or 100 marks (\$23.82). If the father's death was in accordance with the stipulations for the war pension, the full orphan, or the child whose mother is not entitled to the war pension, receives 140 marks (\$33.35) war pension; his total pension is therefore 240 marks (\$57.17) per year.

If the general pension is not granted, the full orphan (or equivalent) receives 240 marks (\$57.17). In either case the full orphan (or equivalent) receives a total pension of 240 marks (\$57.17) per year.

*Maximum pension for child of a private.*—(a) Child whose mother is living. The child receives 20 per cent of the general pension granted to the widow, i. e., a general pension of 108 marks (\$25.73). The general pension of the widow and orphans together must not exceed 540 marks (\$128.63). If it does, all the benefits are decreased proportionately until 540 marks (\$128.63) is reached. If the father's death in addition satisfies the stipulation for the award of war pension, each fatherless child receives 108 marks (\$25.73) war pension; his total pension is therefore 216 marks (\$51.45) per year.

If the general pension is not granted, the child receives annually 168 marks (\$40.02) war pension.

(b) Full orphan. The full orphan (i. e., widow's step-child) receives  $33\frac{1}{3}$  per cent of the general widow's pension, i. e., 180 marks (\$42.88). If war pension is awarded, the full orphan (or child whose mother is not entitled to a widow's war pension at the time of the father's death) receives 140 marks (\$33.35); his total pension is therefore 320 marks (\$76.22) per year.

If the general pension is not granted, the full orphan receives 240 marks (\$57.17) war pension per year.

*Maximum pension for a parent or grandparent.*—Only war pension is granted to a parent or grandparent, under the same condition for the soldier's death as before, and only if the deceased had been their entire or chief support before entering the Army, or after leaving the Army, up to the time of his last illness or death. The pension

consists of a maximum of 250 marks (\$59.55) per year for a single beneficiary on behalf of a private or noncommissioned officer, and is granted only in case of need, by consent of the highest military or marine authority of the contingent. The parent or grandparent of an officer receives 450 marks (\$107.19) a year.

*Sample calculation of general pension for a widow and orphans.*<sup>1</sup>—A sergeant (Oberfahnenschmied), having served 19 years, received on leaving active service a pension for total disability amounting to 720 marks (\$171.50) plus 180 marks (\$42.88) increase (due to pensionable bonuses amounting to 240 marks), or a total of 900 marks (\$214.38). He died and was survived by a widow more than 21 years younger than himself to whom he had been married 6 years, three children that she had borne to him and three children of a former wife.

The widow's basic annual pension on which the actual pension of the family would depend would include three elements:<sup>2</sup>

300 marks (\$71.46), the minimum widow's pension.

18 marks (\$4.29), for each year in excess of 15 years that her husband had served, amounting in this case to four times 18 marks, or 72 marks (\$17.15) a year.

30 per cent of her husband's active service bonuses of 240 marks, or 72 marks (\$17.15) a year.

This basic widow's pension would therefore equal 444 marks (\$105.76).

Each of the widow's three children would receive 20 per cent of this widow's pension or 88.80 marks, which according to the law is rounded out to 90 marks (\$21.44), and together they add 270 marks (\$64.31) to the family pension.

Each of the three motherless children would receive 33½ per cent of the widow's pension or 148 marks, which is rounded out to 150 marks (\$35.73), and together they add 450 marks (\$107.19) to the family pension.

The total pension on this basis would amount to 444 marks plus 270 marks plus 450 marks or 1,164 marks (\$277.26). But the total for all dependents must not exceed the pension for total disability to which the husband's grade entitled him plus three-fourths of his pensionable bonuses, or in this case, as we have seen, 900 marks (\$214.38).<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Armee Verordnungsblatt, vol. 41, 1907, p. 252.

<sup>2</sup> Compare formula, 300 marks plus 18  $z$  marks plus 30 per cent of  $B$ , in Schedule 21, p. 98.

<sup>3</sup> Compare formula, 100 per cent of  $DP$  plus 75 per cent of  $B$ , in Schedule 21, p. 98.

In reducing the total family pension from 1,164 marks (\$277.26) to 900 marks (\$214.38) the right proportion between the shares allowed to the widow, the widow's children, and the children of a previous wife must be preserved. As we have seen, the share of a widow's child is 20 per cent or one-fifth of the widow's share, and the share of a motherless child is 33½ per cent or one-third of the widow's share, and this gives the following triple proportion:

Widow : Widow's child : Motherless child :: 15 : 3 : 5.

In this family there are 3 children of the widow and 3 motherless children, so the proportion becomes:

Widow : Widow's children : Motherless children :: 15 : 9 : 15.

The total pension of 900 marks (\$214.38) would therefore be apportioned as follows:

Widow, $\frac{1}{5}$ of 900 marks.....	346.15 marks (\$82.45).
Widow's children, $\frac{3}{5}$ of 900 marks.....	207.70 marks (\$49.47).
Motherless children, $\frac{1}{3}$ of 900 marks.....	346.15 marks (\$82.45).

Again, the widow's share must be reduced because she was more than 15 years younger than her husband, but the reduction is modified by the fact that they had been married more than 5 years. For each year in excess of 15 years that the widow was younger than her husband her pension is reduced by one-twentieth, and for each year in excess of 5 years during which they had been married it is increased by one-tenth. Letting  $x$  equal the number of years in excess of 15 and  $y$  the number of years in excess of 5, the following formula develops for finding the widow's proper share:<sup>1</sup>

$$\frac{20-x+2y}{20} \times 346.15 \text{ marks ($82.45).}$$

In this case  $x$  equals 7 and  $y$  equals 1, therefore the formula becomes  $\frac{20-7+2}{20}$  or  $\frac{15}{20}$  or  $\frac{3}{4} \times 346.15$  marks (\$82.45), and this equals 259.61 marks (\$61.84).

The amount deducted from the widow's share—86.54 marks (\$20.61)—is distributed among the children so that the share of the widow's children is to the share of the motherless children as 9 is to 15:

Widow's children, $\frac{9}{15}$ of 86.54 marks.....	32.45 marks (\$7.73).
Motherless children, $\frac{6}{15}$ of 86.54 marks.....	53.09 marks (\$12.89).

Adding these amounts to the children's original share we have:

Widow's children, 207.70 marks plus 32.45 marks.....	240.15 marks (\$57.20).
Motherless children, 346.15 marks plus 53.09 marks.....	400.24 marks (\$95.34).

And the family receives as follows:

Widow.....	259.61 marks (\$61.84).
Children.....	640.39 marks (\$152.54).
Total.....	900.00 marks (\$214.38).

<sup>1</sup> Compare Schedule 21, p. 96.

SCHEDULE 24.—*Germany.* General pension of a sergeant major's widow.

NOTE.—The sergeant major (reenlisted) had received \$60 M. (\$85.75) yearly in pensionable bonus in addition to his salary of \$45.20 M. (\$177.51) and he had died before leaving active service after 20 years of service. The widow was  $(15+x)$  years younger than he was, and his married life with her had lasted  $(5+y)$  years.]

maximum of 450,48 M. (\$107.30) per year.

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in marks; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

*Discussion of formula for a widow's general pension.*—In the charts for pensions of dependents, so many stipulations depending upon variable quantities are attached to certain benefits that the generalized benefit can be expressed concisely only in terms of an algebraic formula. Thus the widow of a reenlisted private or noncommissioned officer who, according to budget, had received a pensionable bonus or good-conduct pay  $B$ ; who had died before leaving active service after  $(18+u)$  years of service; whose wife had been  $(15+x)$  years younger than himself; whose married life with her had lasted  $(5+y)$  years, receives a general pension equal to

$$\frac{20-x+2y}{20} \left[ (354+18u) \text{ M.} + (15+0.9u) \% \text{ of } B \right] \text{ M. a year.}$$

The maximum is set at  $(354+18u)$  M. +  $[(15+0.9u) \% \text{ of } B]$  M. a year.

The application of this formula can be illustrated by a concrete case. A sergeant major in the Wurttemberg "Schlossgarde Kompanie" receives by budget in addition to a salary of 745.20 marks (\$177.51) per year, a pensionable bonus ( $B=360$  M.) or 300 marks (\$85.75). If he had reenlisted and died before leaving active service after 20 years of service ( $u=2$ ) the formula for the widow's pension would have been

$$\frac{20-x+2y}{20} \left[ 390 \text{ M.} + 16.8\% \text{ of } B \right] = \frac{20-x+2y}{20} (450.48)$$

As there are here only two variables,  $x$  and  $y$ , the benefits can be shown for different values of  $x$  and  $y$  in a plane table. The maximum value is 450.48 marks (\$107.30), and the formula applies only for values under the maximum.

#### LUMP-SUM PAYMENTS.

A lump-sum payment in place of the pension annuity may be granted to disabled soldiers and to widows of enlisted men for the purpose of acquisition or economic improvement of landed property of their own, or cooperation in a mutually advantageous building or colonizing enterprise with the aim of acquiring property of their own, if (a) the claimant is between 21 and 55 years of age (exceptions may be made if he is older than 55) and (b) useful expenditure is guaranteed. The indemnity is based on the age of the claimant, who receives a given multiple of the annual pension fee. The annual pension of a disabled man may include mutilation bonus and war bonus or Tropics bonus to the extent of the war bonus; the annual pension of a widow for this purpose may be not more than 300 marks (\$71.46)

for the widow of a sergeant major<sup>1</sup> or a sergeant of the voluntary medical corps; 250 marks (\$59.55) for the widow of a sergeant, corporal, deputy sergeant or sectional leader of the voluntary medical corps; 200 marks (\$47.64) for the widow of a private or any other person of the lower ranks of the voluntary medical corps.<sup>2</sup>

Age of claimant.	Multiple of annual pension.	Age of claimant.	Multiple of annual pension.
21.....	18.50	39.....	14.00
22.....	18.25	40.....	13.75
23.....	18.00	41.....	13.50
24.....	17.75	42.....	13.25
25.....	17.50	43.....	13.00
26.....	17.25	44.....	12.75
27.....	17.00	45.....	12.50
28.....	16.75	46.....	12.25
29.....	16.50	47.....	12.00
30.....	16.25	48.....	11.75
31.....	16.00	49.....	11.25
32.....	15.75	50.....	10.75
33.....	15.50	51.....	10.25
34.....	15.25	52.....	9.75
35.....	15.00	53.....	9.25
36.....	14.75	54.....	8.75
37.....	14.50	55.....	8.25
38.....	14.25		

#### ADMINISTRATION.

*Disability pensions.*—Pensions to army officers<sup>3</sup> are granted by the ministry of war and to navy officers by the imperial navy office. Pensions are paid monthly in advance, and begin at the end of the last month for which the salary was paid.

The right to pension ceases with the officer's return to active military life or with his sentence to prison for high treason or a similar offense.

The pension is suspended:

- (1) For the time the officer is not a subject of the empire;
- (2) When the pensioner is abroad, or his whereabouts are unknown at the time a charge of high treason is lodged against him;
- (3) For the time of his stay in an invalid home;
- (4) In case of temporary entrance into active military service; in this case the amount of salary received is subtracted from the pension;
- (5) For the time during which he occupies a post in the civil service.

Pensions to soldiers and sailors<sup>4</sup> are granted by the same authorities as are officers' pensions.

<sup>1</sup> Or vice sergeant major, or a sergeant with the wages of a sergeant major.

<sup>2</sup> Reichsgesetzblatt, 1916, p. 680.

<sup>3</sup> Law of May 31, 1906, Reichsgesetzblatt, 1906, p. 565

<sup>4</sup> Ibid., p. 593.

The determination of the degree of incapacity and its connection with the injury received in service is assigned to special military medical authorities. The injured man has the right to show evidence in behalf of his claim. Appeal against a decision may be filed with the next higher authority, and in the last instance with the ministry of war.

As in the case of officers, pensions to soldiers are paid monthly in advance.

The right to pension and other relief ceases with the soldier's return to active military service; also with his sentence for high treason or a similar offense.

The certificate showing claim to a post in the civil service<sup>1</sup> goes out of force when the owner of the certificate retires from civil service with a pension.

The pension and other relief is suspended—

- (1) For the time the pensioner is not a subject of the Empire.
- (2) When the pensioner is abroad or his whereabouts are unknown at the time a charge of high treason is lodged against him.
- (3) For the time of his stay in an invalid home, military hospital, or sanitarium.<sup>2</sup>
- (4) In case of temporary entrance into active military service. In this case the amount of salary received is subtracted from the pension.

A deduction from the pension, varying according to the amount of wages received, is also made during the time the pensioner occupies a civil-service position.

*Dependents' pensions.*—Pensions to dependents of officers and soldiers are granted by the same authorities as are invalid pensions.

Payment begins at the end of the period for which gratuities (Gnadengebührnisse) were given, and in their absence with the day after the soldier's death. The regular pensions are paid monthly in advance; the additional gratuities in single payments. General pensions and war pensions are granted simultaneously.

The widow receives the pension until her remarriage or death; an orphan until his or her eighteenth birthday, marriage, or death. The right of the pension is suspended for the time the pensioner is not a subject of the empire.

*Lump-sum payments.*<sup>3</sup>—Lump-sum payments in place of an annual pension are permitted to a widow or to a disabled soldier on account of a civil-service certificate.

The application must specify at least in a general way the purpose for which the lump sum is intended. The military authorities of

<sup>1</sup> Granted on retirement to disabled noncommissioned officers and men.

<sup>2</sup> In such cases the pension is given either wholly or partly to the soldier's family, if he had one to support.

<sup>3</sup> Circular of July 8, 1916, on the administration of the law on lump-sum payments of war pensions. Reichsgesetzblatt, 1916, p. 684.

the district investigate whether the pensioner had reached his or her twenty-first but not fifty-fifth birthday, and whether for any reason, such as intended remarriage, the forfeiture of the pension is imminent. The central civil authorities of the State investigate the personal and family circumstances of the petitioner. After this the application is sent to the commanding general of the district for decision. Against this decision an appeal may be made to the war ministry, whose decision is final.

Payment is made according to regulations issued by the war ministry in cooperation with the highest civil authorities.

The expenditure of the money is supervised by civil authorities chosen for this purpose by the ministry of war.

In case of remarriage of the widow, the question of refunding the lump sum payment is decided by the ministry of war.

*Length of service.*—Pensions are in many cases based upon length of service. For the army, navy, and colonial forces the following provisions hold:

(1) Time of service is counted from the day of entering active service until the end of the month in which the officer, and the end of the day on which the private or noncommissioned officer, leaves the service.

(2) Time spent in the service before the eighteenth year of age is reached, is not counted, except in case of war, in which case the count begins with the first day of the war or from the day of entrance into the service in war time.

(3) For every war in which an officer, noncommissioned officer, or private takes part, one year is added to his real time of service. If several wars occur in one year, only one year is added. If a war lasts several years, the Kaiser determines how many war years are to be counted.

(4) Time spent in the civil service of the empire or an allied State is counted for officers.

(5) Time spent in non-European countries (not less than one uninterrupted year of service) counts double with consent of the foreign office, but not if the year is a war year.

(6) Imprisonment of at least one year as a punishment or war imprisonment of at least one year excludes the time of imprisonment from the count. Exceptions to this law are possible with consent of the head of the contingent and of the Kaiser, respectively.

(7) With consent of the highest military authority of the contingent, time spent in military service of a country not belonging to the German Empire may be counted.

For the navy, in addition to the above seven provisions, several others hold.

(8) A voyage of six months or more in foreign waters under the same ship's captain counts double. Foreign waters are those which are not part of the North Sea or Baltic, these being counted up to the Dover-Calais line up to 3 west longitude, 60 north latitude.

(9) A voyage shorter than six months, if very injurious to the health of the crew, may (with the Kaiser's consent) count double.

(10) Time (not less than six uninterrupted months) spent by a member of the Navy not belonging to a ship's crew in the colonies or their unexplored interior, and in the voyages in foreign waters thereunto pertaining, counts double unless the year is a war year.

For the colonial forces, in addition to the first seven provisions, two further ones hold:

(11) Service in the colonies with the colonial forces, if not less than six consecutive months in length, counts double.

(12) Voyages in foreign seas, if not less than six consecutive months in duration, count double, unless the year is a war year.

Stipulations for the reserves show slight further variations.

#### REFERENCES.

Reichsamt des Innern. Reichsgesetzblatt.

Preussen, Kriegsministerium. Armee Verordnungsblatt.

Adam, M. Das Militärversorgungsrecht im Heere, in der Marine, und in den Schutztruppen, Berlin, Kameradschaft, 1916.

Rimrod, C. Was muss jeder Kriegsteilnehmer von der Kriegsversorgung wissen? München, J. Lindauer, 1915.

Veltzé's Internationaler Armee Almanach, Stuttgart, Ch. Belser, 1913-1914.

Verhandlungen des Reichstages, vol. 241, Berlin, Julius Sittenfeld, 1907.

Soziale Praxis, Berlin.

#### GREAT BRITAIN AND BRITISH COLONIES.<sup>1</sup>

##### GREAT BRITAIN.

###### INTRODUCTION.

In Great Britain four kinds of payments may be made by the State to soldiers and sailors and their dependents. Separation allowances may be paid to wives and other dependents while the man is absent on military or naval duty; special allowances are made the man if he can prove that obligations contracted before he went into the service must be met at a certain time in order to prevent serious

<sup>1</sup> A separate report entitled "Care of Dependents of Enlisted Men in Canada" was prepared by S. Herbert Wolfe and published by the Children's Bureau in May, 1917 (U. S. Department of Labor, Children's Bureau publication No. 25). The material on Great Britain and the British Colonies in the present report was prepared by Miss Louise Moore.

financial loss to him; disability pensions may be paid to a man injured in the line of duty or suffering from illness contracted or aggravated by duty; pensions may be paid to wives, children, and other dependents in case the man is killed or dies from wounds or injury, the consequence of military or naval duty. Either allowances or pensions may be continued to children beyond the established age limit under special circumstances.

Separation allowances may be paid to wives and legitimate children under 16 years of age, to unmarried wives and their children, to illegitimate children supported by the man before he went into the service under court order or otherwise, and in the absence of wife and children to other persons proved to have been dependent on the soldier or sailor before he entered the service. Separation allowance to the wife depends on the man's making her an allotment from his pay, which is somewhat more than a third of the amount allowed by the State in addition. In the army the allotment is obligatory. The amount of separation allowance made to a wife depends on the rank of the man. The separation allowance payable for each child is not contingent on a man's making any allotment and is the same for the children of men of all ranks. For other dependents the man must make an allotment if separation allowance is requested. A wife and four children of the private of lowest rank receive 25s. (\$6.08) a week, of which the man pays 3s. 6d. (85 cents). Separation allowance to wife and children is in no case withheld because the beneficiary has other means of support.

Special allowances may be paid to enable men to meet financial obligations contracted before they entered service for the following purposes: To pay installments due on furniture or real property, to rent property, to pay interest and installments due on loans, including mortgages, to pay rates or taxes, to pay insurance premiums or fees due for children's schooling. The need for financial assistance must be proved, and the amount paid by the State can not exceed £104 (\$506.12) per annum.

Disability pension is based on the amount of disability and the rank of the disabled man. Various kinds of disability are specified, and the rates paid are proportionate to their ratio to total disability. Total disability for a private is rated at 27s. 6d. (\$6.69) a week, and 20 per cent disability at 5s. 6d. (\$1.34) a week. In addition, a sum is granted for each child, this sum also proportionate to the extent of the father's disability. Provision is made for additional payments in case the man is disabled in such a way as to require the constant attendance of another person. The payment of one-half of the disability pension may be conditional on the man's undergoing treatment or training certified as necessary for his interest. No reduction in the amount of pension granted will be made if earning

capacity is increased by such treatment or training. When a man is undergoing training or treatment he may be paid an additional allowance.

Instead of receiving the disability pension, a man may, if he chooses, be granted a pension based in amount on his prewar income. If he can prove that the pension, with children's allowance, together with his average earnings is less than his prewar earnings, he may be granted a pension which together with his average earnings will equal but not exceed his prewar earnings up to a maximum of 50s. (\$12.16) a week, plus half of any prewar earnings between 50s. (\$12.16) and 100s. (\$24.32) a week. In case a man chooses the prewar earnings instead of the usual disability pension, he loses all disability pension and allowances for children. A similar arrangement can be made by officers up to a higher maximum prewar income.

Commissioned officers also receive disability pensions based on the degree of disability. These vary with the kind of commission—temporary or permanent—held by the officer and also with his rank.

Pensions in case of the death of a soldier or sailor may be paid to wives and legitimate children, to unmarried wives and their children, to illegitimate children, and to other persons previously dependent on the man for support. Pensions are to be paid in case the man is killed in the performance of naval or military duty, dies as a result of wounds or injuries received in the performance of such duty within seven years of receiving such wounds or injuries, or dies of disease certified as contracted or commencing while on active service or as having been aggravated by active service within seven years of his removal from duty on account of such disease, providing the man's death has not been caused by his serious negligence or misconduct. The rates for the widow vary from 21s. 3d. (\$5.17) a week for the widow of a warrant officer Class I, to 13s. 9d. (\$3.34) a week for the widow of a private or marine. In addition a sum is paid for each child until such child is 16. A widow is granted an additional allowance while receiving any course of instruction which the minister of pensions thinks will be of advantage to her.

If a widow can show that the pension paid her together with children's allowances is less than one-half the amount her husband would have received had he been paid on the basis of prewar earnings as described above, she may be paid in lieu of her pension and children's allowances a pension not to exceed one-half of what her husband would have received if pensioned under the prewar earnings scheme.

In addition to widow and children, other dependents may also be pensioned if they can prove prewar dependence. Parents may be pensioned when they become incapable of self-support even if they

were not dependent on the man for support previous to his joining the colors, providing the man was, at the time of beginning his service, an apprentice at a recognized trade or if he was still receiving training in school or had been articled to a profession.

Widows of army officers receive pensions based on the rank of the deceased and the manner of his death, those killed in action or on flying duty being entitled to the highest rate.

The royal patriotic fund corporation, of which some of the officers are appointed by the King and the rest by the admiralty, army council and other bodies, administer funds collected from private sources for the relief of soldiers, sailors, and their families for whom the allowances and pension prove insufficient. Local committees administer the fund under the orders of the chief or statutory committees. The royal patriotic fund corporation takes into account prewar income and prewar dependence, besides the earning capacity of the applicant for aid. They pay also temporary allowances where no pension is payable out of public funds, and grant supplementary allowances for rent. Since June, 1916, they have administered the private relief for soldiers' and sailors' families which was previously in charge of the soldiers' and sailors' families association and soldiers' and sailors' help society and royal patriotic fund.

#### ARMY AND NAVY SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.

Separation allowances are payable to persons dependent on the man before mobilization or before his enlistment. Wives and children do not have to prove that they were dependent; other persons must prove the extent of their dependence.

Wives and children are given precedence in the awarding of separation allowances, and they do not have to prove financial need. Wives may receive this allowance if the husband makes an allotment from pay. In the army this allotment is obligatory, except for commissioned officers, and a minimum is fixed. For privates and corporals this minimum is 3s. 6d. (85 cents) a week, and for other ranks 5s. 10d. (\$1.42) a week.<sup>1</sup> If the man can prove that the income of his wife, exclusive of allotment from pay and separation allowance, is equal to the sum of separation allowance and allotment due to wives of men of his rank, he is not required to make any allotment. In the navy, an allotment of 5s. (\$1.22) a week is fixed. This is not obligatory, but no separation allowance is paid unless the allotment is made. In either the army or navy if the man chooses he may make a larger allotment; the separation allowance remains the same, and the total amount is thus increased.

A wife living apart from her husband, and not supported by him is not eligible for separation allowance. On the other hand, if he had

<sup>1</sup> The pay of a private soldier (lowest rank) is 7s. (\$1.70) a week.

contributed to her support, under court order or otherwise, before mobilization or enlistment, she may under some circumstances receive the allowance. In the army she may be treated as a "dependent other than wives and children," up to the amount previously contributed by her husband, but not exceeding the amount payable for a wife under ordinary circumstances. In this case he must make the necessary allotment from pay. Wives of men of the navy, other than reservists or men enlisted "for hostilities," if before the war living apart from their husbands are not entitled to separation allowance, even though contribution toward their support had been made by the husband. The wives of naval reservists and men enlisted "for hostilities" who were, before their enlistment, contributing more than their naval pay now permits them to allot, may be granted some separation allowance if the man allots as much as his pay allows.

Unmarried wives of men both of the army and navy may receive separation allowance as wives, providing the man voluntarily makes the necessary allotment from pay. The woman must prove that she was dependent on the man for support before enlistment or mobilization. The fact of dependence, but not the extent of dependence, has to be proved. In the navy the local old-age pension authorities are made judges of the facts of the case.

For legitimate children a separation allowance is payable, but no allotment from pay in their favor is required. The amount of separation allowance varies with the number of children, and no maximum is set. In both army and navy an additional sum is given for children under the age of 14. The amount of allowance for motherless children is larger than that for children with their mothers. Children of wives living apart from their husbands receive a somewhat different treatment in the army and in the navy. In the army the children of such wives are eligible for separation allowance. If the mother was previously supported by the man, this allowance is the same as for children of wives who were living with their husbands previous to mobilization or enlistment. If the man did not contribute to her support, and she is in consequence not eligible for separation allowance, the children receive separation allowance at the motherless rate, whether they are living with their mother or elsewhere. In the case of the navy, if the separated wife was not previously supported by the man, and is in consequence not eligible for separation allowance, her children get nothing.

Illegitimate children by an unmarried wife have the separation allowance payable to legitimate children. Children of a soldier who are not in the care of the unmarried wife, are eligible for separation allowance. If the father was married, and the illegitimate child was a member of his household, he is treated like the other children; if the illegitimate child was not a member of his household, he re-

ceives nothing. If the illegitimate child of an unmarried soldier was living in his household and no separation allowance is being paid for any dependent, the child may receive the motherless rate of 5 shillings (\$1.22) with no obligation for allotment. If the child of an unmarried soldier, although not living with him, was being supported by him separation allowance is payable up to the amount of such prior maintenance or 5 shillings (\$1.22) a week, whichever is the less provided (1) that separation allowance is being paid for no other dependent; (2) that the soldier makes the allotment from pay required for "dependents other than wives and children."

Separation allowances in respect of children are payable until the child reaches the age of 16. They may be continued up to 21<sup>1</sup> if the child is incapable of earning a living because of bodily or mental infirmity, or if he is an apprentice earning only nominal wages, or is attending technical school, secondary school, or university.

Separation allowance is issuable for dependents other than wives and children if the beneficiary can prove prewar dependence and if neither wife nor child is in receipt of separation allowance. The possession of income from other sources does not debar an applicant otherwise eligible. The maximum is either (1) a sum which, taken with the allotment, will equal the amount of prewar dependence, or (2) the wife's allowance, whichever is the less. The usage as to allotment from pay necessary to secure this separation allowance differs in the army and navy. In the army, the amount is dependent on the allotment. If there is more than one dependent, and the man makes the allotment as for a wife, the first dependent receives allowance as for a wife, and the others as children over 14. In the navy, the reservists and men enlisted "for hostilities" must allot an amount equal to one-half of prewar dependence. The other one-half is then granted as separation allowance. If more than one person has been dependent on one man, the first receives the amount as for a wife, and the others as children over 14. Men of the navy other than reservists or those enlisted for hostilities must allot a sum equal to the allowance they made before the war to the dependent; to this the separation allowance of one-half the amount of the prewar dependence is added. Inmates of asylums, workhouses, reformatories, or any other institution supported from public funds are not eligible for separation allowance.

Separation allowances for the army or navy are not stopped under any circumstances except two: (1) If a man is a deserter (in which case they are renewed if he returns) and (2) if he is wounded or killed. If a soldier is wounded, separation allowances are continued

<sup>1</sup> The rules for the issue of separation allowance for the Navy do not specify to what age allowances may be continued for children under instruction.

for two weeks; if he is killed they are continued for 26 weeks. Allotments from pay stop whenever a man forfeits pay—during absence, detention, imprisonment, or sickness in hospital caused by an offense under the army act. In the case of a penal sentence, they continue until a man is discharged from the army. Both allotments and separation allowances continue if a man is a prisoner of war, and he may begin or increase allotments, after his capture, up to three-fourths of his total pay. Separation allowances and allotments are paid together weekly at the post office indicated by the beneficiary in the application.

Since both soldiers and sailors must be insured under the national insurance act, their wives are eligible to the usual 30s. (\$7.30) maternity benefit for each confinement.

*SCHEDULE 25.—Great Britain, Army. Classification of rank for separation allowances.*

Class 15. Acting sergeant major of a unit formed on mobilization.

Chief warder in charge of a detention branch (for traveling abroad and passage only).

Warrant officer.

Class 16. Chief warder or principal warder of military prison or detention barrack (for traveling abroad and passage).

Master gunner, third class.

Quartermaster corporal major (Household Cavalry).

Quartermaster sergeant.

Schoolmaster (when not a warrant officer or probationer).

Class 17. Color sergeant.

Squadron corporal major (Household Cavalry).

Squadron, battery, troop, or company sergeant major.

Squadron quartermaster corporal (Household Cavalry).

Squadron, battery, troop, or company quartermaster sergeant.

Staff corporal (Household Cavalry).

Staff sergeant.

Warder and servant, military prison or detention barrack, for traveling abroad and passage.

Class 18. Quartermaster sergeant of pensioners.

Soldier below class 17 employed as clerk in war office (for money allowance only).

Class 19. Corporal of horse (Household Cavalry).

Sergeant.

Class 20. Bombardier.

Corporal.

Trooper.

Private.

Gunner.

Driver.

Sapper.

Second corporal.

SCHEDULE 26.—*Great Britain, Army. Weekly separation allowance<sup>1</sup> to wives and children.*

[Source: Regulations for the Issue of Army Separation Allowance, Allowments of Pay, and Family Allowance during the Present War, p. 5.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence; amounts inside parentheses are in dollars.]

Amount of allowance according to rank of soldier.

Beneficiaries.	Class 20.			Class 19.			Class 18 and 17.			Class 16.			Class 15.		
	Separation allowance.	Total, including allotment.	Separation allowance.	Separation allowance.	Total, including allotment.	Separation allowance.	Separation allowance.	Total, including allotment.							
Wife only.....	£ 0 9 0	£ 0 12 6	£ 0 9 2	£ 0 15 0	£ 0 10 8	£ 0 16 6	£ 0 16 2	£ 0 16 2	£ 0 16 2	£ 0 17 2	£ 0 17 2	£ 0 17 2	£ 0 17 2	£ 0 17 2	
Wife and 1 child.....	0 14 0	0 17 6	0 14 2	(2.23)	(3.65)	(2.59)	(4.01)	(3.93)	(4.01)	1 1 6	1 1 6	1 1 6	1 1 6	(5.35)	(5.35)
Wife and 2 children.....	0 17 6	1 1 0	0 17 8	(4.26)	(4.86)	(4.86)	(5.23)	(5.23)	(5.23)	1 1 5	1 1 5	1 1 5	1 1 5	1 1 5	1 1 5
Wife and 3 children.....	(4.26)	(5.11)	(4.30)	(4.30)	(5.72)	(4.66)	(6.08)	(6.08)	(6.08)	1 1 4	1 1 4	1 1 4	1 1 4	1 1 4	1 1 4
Wife and 4 children.....	(4.74)	(5.59)	(4.78)	(6.20)	(6.20)	(5.15)	(6.57)	(6.57)	(6.57)	1 1 3	1 1 3	1 1 3	1 1 3	1 1 3	1 1 3
	1 1 6	1 5 0	1 1 8	(5.27)	(6.08)	(5.04)	(7.05)	(6.99)	(6.99)	1 1 7	1 1 7	1 1 7	1 1 7	1 1 7	1 1 7
	(5.23)									(6.97)	(6.97)	(6.97)	(6.97)	(7.22)	(7.22)

<sup>1</sup> For families resident in London postal area, in addition, 3s. 6d. a week (0.85). See also Schedule 27, p. 121.

Each additional child, irrespective of rank of father, 2s. (0.49) a week. Each motherless child, irrespective of rank of father, 5s. (1.22) a week.

**SCHEDULE 27.—Great Britain, Army.** *Special weekly allowance for children under 14 years of age (in addition to ordinary weekly amount of separation allowance for children).*<sup>1</sup>

[Source: Army Orders, Apr. 1, 1917.]

Number of children under 14 years of age.	Rank of soldier.		Number of children under 14 years of age.	Rank of soldier.	
	Classes 19 and 20.	Classes 17 and 18.		Classes 19 and 20.	Classes 17 and 18.
1.....	s. d. 2 0(\$0.49)	s. d. 0 6(\$0.12)	5.....	s. d. 7 0(\$1.70)	s. d. 5 6(\$1.34)
2.....	3 6(\$0.85)	2 0(\$0.49)	6.....	8 0(\$1.95)	6 6(\$1.58)
3.....	5 0(\$1.22)	3 6(\$0.85)	7.....	9 0(\$2.19)	7 6(\$1.82)
4.....	6 0(\$1.46)	4 6(\$1.09)	8.....	10 0(\$2.43)	8 6(\$2.07)

<sup>1</sup> This does not apply to classes above 17.

Each additional child, irrespective of rank of father, 1s. (24 cents). Motherless children under 14 years of age receive in addition to the 5s. (\$1.22) payable for each motherless child under 16, allowances as follows: First child, 2s. (49 cents); each additional child, 1s. (24 cents).

**SCHEDULE 28.—Great Britain, Navy.** *Classification of naval and marine ratings for separation allowances.*

Sailor.	Marine on ship's books.
Class I. Ordinary seaman.....	Private.
Able seaman.....	Corporal.
Leading seaman, second-class petty officer, and equivalent ratings.	Sergeant and equivalent ranks.
Class II. Petty officer, petty officer first class, and equivalent ratings.	Color sergeant and equivalent ranks.
Class III. Chief petty officer and equivalent ratings; warrant officers, Royal Navy.	Warrant officer, class II, quartermaster sergeant and staff sergeant; Royal Marine gunner.
Class IV.....	Warrant officer, Royal Marines (except Royal Marine gunners).

**SCHEDULE 29.—Great Britain, Navy.** *Weekly separation allowances<sup>1</sup> to wives and children.*

[Source: Navy Separation Allowance, Extracts from Admiralty Orders, p. 1.]

Beneficiaries.	Amounts payable to families of sailors and marines of—							
	Class I.		Class II.		Class III.		Class IV.	
	Separation allowances.	Total, including allotment.	Separation allowances.	Total, including allotment.	Separation allowances.	Total, including allotment.	Separation allowances.	Total, including allotment.
Wife.....	s. d. 6 0 (\$1.46)	s. d. 11 0 (\$2.68)	s. d. 7 0 (\$1.70)	s. d. 12 0 (\$2.92)	s. d. 8 0 (\$1.95)	s. d. 13 0 (\$3.16)	s. d. 9 0 (\$2.19)	s. d. 14 0 (\$3.41)
Wife and 1 child.....	10 0 (\$2.43)	15 0 (\$3.65)	11 0 (\$2.68)	16 0 (\$3.89)	12 0 (\$2.92)	17 0 (\$4.14)	13 0 (\$3.16)	18 0 (\$4.38)
Wife and 2 children..	13 0 (\$3.16)	18 0 (\$4.38)	14 0 (\$3.41)	19 0 (\$4.62)	15 0 (\$3.65)	20 0 (\$4.87)	16 0 (\$3.89)	21 0 (\$5.11)
Wife and 3 children..	15 0 (\$3.65)	20 0 (\$4.87)	16 0 (\$3.89)	21 0 (\$5.11)	17 0 (\$4.14)	22 0 (\$5.35)	18 0 (\$4.38)	23 0 (\$5.60)
Wife and 4 children..	16 0 (\$3.89)	21 0 (\$5.11)	17 0 (\$4.14)	22 0 (\$5.35)	18 0 (\$4.38)	23 0 (\$5.60)	19 0 (\$4.62)	24 0 (\$5.84)

<sup>1</sup> These rates are increased by 3s. 6d. (85 cents) a week for families resident in the London postal area. (See also Schedule 30, p. 122.)

Each subsequent child, irrespective of rank or rating of father, 1s. (24 cents) a week. Each motherless child, irrespective of rank or rating of father, 5s. (\$1.22) a week.

**SCHEDULE 30.—Great Britain, Navy.** *Special weekly allowance for children under 14 years of age (payable in addition to ordinary amounts of separation allowance for wives and children).*

[Source: Navy Separation Allowance, Extracts from Admiralty Orders, p. 2.]

Number of children under 14.	Weekly amounts payable.			
	Class I.	Class II.	Class III.	Class IV.
	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.
1.....	2 0 (\$0.49)	1 0 (\$0.24)	1 6 (\$0.36)	0 6 (\$0.12)
2.....	3 6 (\$0.85)	2 6 (\$0.61)	3 0 (\$0.73)	2 0 (\$0.49)
3.....	5 0 (\$1.22)	4 0 (\$0.97)	4 0 (\$0.97)	3 0 (\$0.73)
4.....	6 0 (\$1.46)	5 0 (\$1.22)	5 0 (\$1.22)	4 0 (\$0.97)
5.....	7 0 (\$1.70)	6 0 (\$1.46)	6 0 (\$1.46)	5 0 (\$1.22)
6.....	8 0 (\$1.95)	7 0 (\$1.70)	7 0 (\$1.70)	6 0 (\$1.46)
7.....	9 0 (\$2.19)	8 0 (\$1.95)	8 0 (\$1.95)	7 0 (\$1.70)
8.....	10 0 (\$2.43)	9 0 (\$2.19)	8 0 (\$1.95)	7 0 (\$1.70)

For each subsequent child, irrespective of rank or rating of father, 1s. (24 cents). Motherless children under 14 years of age, irrespective of rank or rating of father, receive in addition to the 5s. (\$1.22) payable for each motherless child allowances as follows: First child, 2s. (49 cents); each additional child, 1s. (24 cents).

**SCHEDULE 31.—Great Britain, Army.** *Allotment from pay and separation allowance for dependents other than wives and children.*

[Source: Regulations for the Issue of Army Separation Allowance, Allotments from Pay, and Family Allowances during the Present War, p. 54.]

[The amount of separation allowance to dependents other than wife or child is determined for each case. Maximum amounts, varying according to the amount allotted by the soldier, are fixed in the regulations. The minimum allotments required to secure the various maximum allowances are shown in the following schedule.]

Related amounts for class 20.			Related amounts for classes 15 to 19.		
Minimum weekly allotment.	Maximum separation allowance.	Total minimum allotment and maximum separation allowance.	Minimum weekly allotment.	Maximum separation allowance.	Total minimum allotment and maximum separation allowance.
s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.
0 7 (\$0.14)	2 5 (\$0.59)	3 0 (\$0.73)	0 7 (\$0.14)	1 11 (\$0.47)	2 6 (\$0.61)
1 2 (\$0.23)	3 10 (\$0.93)	5 0 (\$1.21)	1 2 (\$0.23)	2 10 (\$0.69)	4 0 (\$0.97)
1 9 (\$0.43)	5 9 (\$1.40)	7 6 (\$1.83)	1 9 (\$0.43)	3 9 (\$0.91)	5 6 (\$1.34)
2 4 (\$0.57)	7 2 (\$1.74)	9 6 (\$2.31)	2 4 (\$0.57)	4 8 (\$1.14)	7 0 (\$1.71)
2 11 (\$0.71)	8 7 (\$2.09)	11 6 (\$2.80)	2 11 (\$0.71)	5 7 (\$1.36)	8 6 (\$2.07)
3 6 (\$0.85)	{ Exceeding <sup>1</sup> 8 7 (\$2.09)	11 6 (\$2.80)	3 6 (\$0.85)	6 6 (\$1.58)	10 0 (\$2.43)
			4 1 (\$0.99)	7 5 (\$1.80)	11 6 (\$2.79)
			4 8 (\$1.14)	8 4 (\$2.02)	13 0 (\$3.17)
			5 3 (\$1.28)	9 3 (\$2.25)	14 6 (\$3.53)
			5 10 (\$1.42)	{ Exceeding <sup>1</sup> 9 3 (\$2.25)	14 6 (\$3.53)

<sup>1</sup> If the amount allotted to these dependents is equal to that allotted to a wife (3s. 6d. for class 20, 5s. 10d. for classes 15 to 19) the dependents receive allowances on the same basis as wife and children over 14 years of age, with no fixed maximum.

#### ARMY AND NAVY DISABILITY PENSIONS.

If a soldier, seaman, or marine is discharged as medically unfit for further service, such unfitness being certified as either attributable to or aggravated by military or naval service in consequence of the present war, and not being due to the serious negligence or mis-

conduct of the discharged man, he is eligible for a disability pension. The maximum payment is for total disability, and grades of disability are arranged on a percentage basis, with proportionate amounts for the several degrees. The amounts vary according to rank, but the pension for the lowest rank of Army and Navy is the same.

If a man's medical unfitness is neither attributable to nor aggravated by military or naval service, and has not been caused by his negligence or misconduct, he may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance up to a maximum of £150 (\$729.98).

In addition to his own pension, a man receives pensions for children under the age of 16, or over that age if they are mentally or physically infirm, are apprentices receiving a nominal wage, or are attending a secondary or technical school or a university. The pensions for the children also are in proportion to the father's disability.

If a child is maintained in the army or navy or in any institution wholly or mainly supported from public funds, the allowance granted on his account may be reduced "to the extent of the relief."

Disabled Army men of the lowest rank receive no additional pension for service. For men of the Army above the lowest rank, who are eligible for service pensions, two arrangements are made, of which the man can choose the plan more advantageous to him. By the first, he is entitled to the disability pension of his rank, with no addition for service. By the second, he receives the same rate as a man of the lowest rank, and in addition all the pension to which his service entitles him. In the Navy the same disability pension rate is fixed for men of all ratings. In addition to this, and to the usual service pensions to which the man is eligible, a special pension is given in respect of service, which includes periods of service shorter than those recognized by the ordinary regulations.

Instead of disability, prewar earnings may be made the basis of the award of pension, if the man thinks this arrangement more to his advantage. In this case he must prove that the sum of the pension to which his disability entitles him, plus the children's pensions and the average earnings of which he is capable, is less than his prewar earnings, up to a maximum of 75s. (\$18.24) a week.

Various inducements are offered to make a man submit to treatment or to training which is considered valuable for him. One-half of the pension due him and his children may be withheld if he refuses to undergo the treatment prescribed. If he must be away from home during the treatment or training, he may be paid the amount due for total incapacity, any fees, charges or expenses are paid, and in addition the wife and children receive the pension they would be entitled to if the man were dead, but the cost of his maintenance while away from home may be deducted from his pension.

At the termination of a period of training, the man may be paid 5s. (\$1.22) for every week he was undergoing such training. If the treatment does not necessitate his being away from home for more than part of the time, he receives his disability pension, the children are given their pensions, and he receives 10s. (\$2.44) for every week the treatment required his absenting himself for part of the time.

If a man's physical disability has not reached its final condition a pension may be granted suitable to the temporary disability. This shall be reviewed from time to time until a permanent assessment is made.

Permanent pensions once granted are not to be decreased on account of any change in the man's earning capacity, whether resulting from training or other cause.

A temporary allowance of 14s. (\$3.41) a week may be granted a man on his discharge until he can be awarded a pension or gratuity.

Since all men of the Army and Navy must be insured under the national insurance act, they are eligible not only for permanent disability benefits due them under the royal warrant for the pensions of soldiers and order in council for the pension of sailors and marines, but also, if totally disabled, to the sum due under the national insurance act. The latter is diminished by 5s. (\$1.22) weekly if the disabled man is in receipt of a pension. The national insurance act expressly states that insured men of the Army and Navy are not eligible for the medical benefit provided by the act.

*SCHEDULE 32.—Great Britain. Comparative rating of specific injuries for enlisted men in the Army and Navy.*

Men with disabilities of 100 per cent or less receive such proportions of the sum payable for total disability as correspond to the degree of their disability, in the following category:

Degrees of disability.

100 per cent.—Loss of two or more limbs.

Loss of an arm and an eye.

Loss of a leg and an eye.

Loss of both hands or of all fingers and thumbs.

Loss of both feet.

Loss of a hand and a foot.

Total loss of sight.

Total paralysis.

Lunacy.

Wounds, injuries or disease resulting in disabled man being permanently bedridden.

Wounds of or injuries to internal, thoracic or abdominal organs, involving total permanent disabling effects.

Wounds of or injuries to head or brain involving total permanent disabling effects, or Jacksonian epilepsy.

Very severe facial disfigurement.

Advanced cases of incurable disease.

## Degrees of disability.

80 per cent.—Amputation of leg at hip or right arm at shoulder joint.

Severe facial disfigurement.

Total loss of speech.

70 per cent.—Short thigh amputation of leg with pelvic band, or of left arm at shoulder joint, or of right arm above or through elbow.

Total deafness.

60 per cent.—Amputation of leg above knee (other than that mentioned under 70 per cent disablement) or through knee, or of left arm above or through elbow, or of right arm below elbow.

50 per cent.—Amputation of leg below knee (including Symes' and Chopart's amputation), or of left arm below elbow.

Loss of vision of one eye.

40 per cent.—Loss of thumb or of four fingers of right hand.

30 per cent.—Loss of thumb or of four fingers of left hand, or of three fingers of right hand.

20 per cent.—Loss of two fingers of either hand.

In the case of left-handed men, certified to be such, the compensation in respect of the left arm, hand, etc., will be as for a right arm, hand, etc., and vice versa.

In case of injuries not shown in this schedule, and in the case of disease, the pension may be assessed at the degree in the schedule which is held most closely to represent the disablement corresponding to the injury or disease.

*SCHEDULE 33.—Great Britain, Army. Classification of ranks of enlisted men for purposes of pensions.*

Class I.—Master gunner, third class; schoolmaster (when not a warrant officer); quartermaster corporal major (Household Cavalry); quartermaster sergeant.

Class II.—Squadron corporal major or squadron quartermaster corporal (Household Cavalry); squadron, battery, troop, or company sergeant major; squadron, battery, troop, or company quartermaster sergeant; staff corporal (Household Cavalry) or staff sergeant; color sergeant.

Class III.—Corporal of horse (Household Cavalry); sergeant.

Class IV.—Corporal; bombardier; second corporal.

Class V.—Trooper; private; gunner; driver; sapper; pioneer (Royal Engineers).

SCHEDULE 34.—*Great Britain. Pensions to enlisted men for total disability.*

In addition to the amounts given in A, B, and C, if the constant attendance of second person is necessary, 20s. (\$4.87) a week (\$253.24 a year) may be paid.

## A.—ARMY AND NAVY. MEN NOT ENTITLED TO SERVICE PENSIONS.

[Data from Royal Warrant for Pensions of Soldiers Disabled and of Families and Dependents of Soldiers Deceased in Consequence of the Present War, together with Order in Council and Regulations for Pensions of British Seamen, their Widows, Relatives, and Dependents, and Royal Warrant for the Pay, Appointment, Promotion, and Noneffective Pay of the Army, 1914, pp. 9, 20.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in shillings and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Rank of men.	Army.	Navy.	Amount of pension payable.	
			Weekly.	Annually.
Private, etc., Class V .....		Seamen and marines, all ratings and ranks. <sup>1</sup>	s. d. (6.69)	(347.88)
Noncommissioned officer, Class IV .....			27 6 (7.30)	(379.69)
Noncommissioned officer, Class III .....			30 0 32 6	(411.32)
Noncommissioned officer, Class II .....			(7.91) 35 0	(442.52)
Noncommissioned officer, Class I, warrant officer, Class II.			(8.51) 37 6	(474.24)
Warrant officer, Class I .....			(9.12) 42 6	(537.68) (10.34)

<sup>1</sup> Any seaman or marine, including chief petty officer or petty officer and warrant officer and noncommissioned officer of the Royal Marines except a Royal Marine gunner who has served or been in receipt of naval or marine pay as such during some period of the present war, and including men belonging to the naval and marine reserves, as well as the seaman or marine specially enlisted or deemed to be specially enlisted for the purpose of the present war and transferred to the reserve, if he has served and been in receipt of naval or marine pay.

For disability of less than 100 per cent, amounts are paid proportionate to the degree of disability.

SCHEDULE 34.—*Great Britain. Pensions to enlisted men for total disability—Continued.*

## B.—ARMY. MEN ENTITLED TO SERVICE PENSIONS.

[Data from Royal Warrant for the Pensions of Soldiers Disabled and of the Families and Dependents of Soldiers Deceased in Consequence of the Present War, together with Order in Council in Regulations for Pensions of British Seamen and Marines, their Widows, Relatives, and Dependents, p. 9; Royal Warrant for the Pay, Appointment, Promotion, and Noneffective Pay of the Army, 1914, p. 274.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in shillings and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Rank.	Service pension payable at the end of not less than 14 years' service.			
	Minimum.		Maximum.	
	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.
Noncommissioned officer, Class IV .....	s. d. (2.13)	(110.76)	s. d. (2.84)	(147.68)
Noncommissioned officer, Class III .....	8 9 (2.55)	(132.60)	11 8 (3.83)	(199.16)
Noncommissioned officer, Class II .....	10 6 (2.98)	(154.96)	15 9 (4.26)	(221.52)
Noncommissioned officer, Class I .....	12 3 (3.41)	(177.32)	17 6 (4.68)	(243.36)
Warrant officer, Class I .....	14 0	(309.92 a year).	19 3	

After serving 5 years as warrant officer, after 20 years' qualifying service, 24s. 6d. (5.96) a week

NOTE.—Men entitled to service pensions receive in addition to service pension (shown above) a flat rate for total disability which is the same for all ranks and amounts

to 27s. 6d. (\$6.69) a week (\$347.88 a year). For lesser disabilities the flat rate varies in proportion to the degree of disability. For disability of less than 20 per cent, a gratuity or temporary allowance may be granted, the maximum to be £200 (\$973.30).

**SCHEDULE 34.—Great Britain. Pensions to enlisted men for total disability—Continued.**

**C.—NAVY. MEN ENTITLED TO SERVICE PENSIONS.**

[Data from Royal Warrant for the Pensions of Soldiers Disabled and of the Families and Dependents of Soldiers Deceased in Consequence of the Present War, together with Order in Council and Regulations for Pensions of British Seamen and Marines, their Widows, Relatives, and Dependents, pp. 12, 20. Admiralty Navy List, April, 1916, p. 912.]

For men of all ranks totally disabled, 27s. 6d. (\$6.69) a week; different degrees of disability, from 80 per cent downward, proceeding by grades of 10 per cent, in proportion to this amount.

The following amounts are added in respect to service to the amount due in each case for disability:

Length of service.	Weekly amount of pension.
6 and less than 12 years.....	s. d. 1 0(\$0.24)
12 and less than 18 years.....	2 0(\$0.49)
18 and less than 21 years.....	3 0(\$0.73)
21 and less than 25 years.....	4 0(\$0.97)
25 years and over.....	5 0(\$1.22)

Further pensions in respect of long-time service are payable in addition to both the amounts above.

Twenty-two years continuous service after age of 18, or 22 years of noncontinuous service after age of 20, weekly, 5s. 10d. (\$1.42).

Each good conduct badge, weekly, 3½d. (7 cents).

Good conduct medal, weekly, 7d. (14 cents).

Maximum pension for service, badges, character and medal, weekly, 8s. 2d. (\$1.99).

Petty officers are entitled to all the rates of pension due them for their service as seamen, and in addition, to pensions as officers as follows:

Petty officer, for each year's service as superior petty officer, weekly, 15s. 2d. (\$3.69).

Second class petty officers or rates ranking as leading seamen with over 3 years service as such, each year, weekly, 7s. 7d. (\$1.84).

Chief petty officers, for each year served in that capacity subsequent to the completion of the first period of continuous engagement, weekly, 15s. 2d. (\$3.69).

**SCHEDULE 35.—Great Britain, Army and Navy. Weekly pensions for children of disabled enlisted men.**

[Data from Royal Warrant for the Pensions of Soldiers Disabled and of the Families and Dependents of Soldiers Deceased in Consequence of the Present War, together with Order in Council and Regulations for Pensions of British Seamen, and Mariners, their Widows, Relatives, and Dependents, pp. 2, 15.]

For first child, 5s. (\$1.22).

For second child, 4s. 2d. (\$1.01).

For third child, 3s. 4d. (81 cents).

For each subsequent child, 2s. 6d. (61 cents).

Children of fathers assessed for other degrees of disability will receive the corresponding proportions of these amounts.

PENSIONS FOR OFFICERS.<sup>1</sup>

A commissioned officer holding a permanent or temporary or local commission in the regular or reserve forces or in the territorial force may be pensioned if he retires, relinquishes his commission, or is placed in the territorial force reserves on account of medical unfitness certified as either attributable to or aggravated by military or naval service in consequence of the present war and not due to his serious negligence or misconduct. If the officer holds a permanent commission in the regular forces he may be granted a pension under whichever of the following plans is more advantageous for him: He may receive the retired pay to which he would ordinarily be eligible according to his rank and length of service and in addition a pension which is the same for all ranks but varies with the degree of disability; or he may be paid the same amount to which an officer holding a temporary commission is eligible. Officers not holding permanent commissions receive pensions varying with rank and degree of disability. An officer in receipt of service pension as a soldier, but not holding a permanent commission may be granted either this service pension plus the special disability pension, which is the same for all ranks, or he may be granted a pension to which an officer holding a temporary commission is eligible. A man totally disabled and needing the constant attendance of a second person may receive an additional pension of £78 (\$379.59) a year. An officer who has lost the sight of both eyes as the result of wounds received in action is to be granted not less than £300 (\$1,459.95) a year.

An educational allowance of not more than £50 (\$243.33) a year may be granted in cases of pecuniary need for each child over the age of 9. This allowance ceases if the disability pension ceases, but ordinarily continues as long as the education which the child is receiving meets the approval of the minister of pensions.

Officers, like enlisted men and noncommissioned officers, may receive a pension based on prewar income. An officer who can prove that the sum of retired pay, together with any wound gratuity or pension to which he is entitled, added to average earnings of which he is capable, does not equal his prewar earnings, may receive an amount equal to prewar earnings up to £300 (\$1,459.95) a year, and half of all prewar earnings between £300 (\$1,459.95) and £600 (\$2,919.90). The maximum pension under this scheme would be £450 (\$2,189.93). In case he chooses this plan of pension he forfeits all claim to ordinary service and wounds pension and all educational allowances for children.

<sup>1</sup> These regulations are from the draft of a royal warrant of May 31, 1917, for the pensions of Army officers, and this draft of a royal warrant contains the statement that similar provisions have been made for naval officers.

Special inducements are offered to officers to submit to treatment or training. An officer's pension once permanently fixed may not be reduced because of increased earning capacity resulting from training or other cause. One-half of his pension may be withheld if he declines to submit to treatment prescribed. Regardless of the extent of his disability he may be granted the highest rate of pension while he is receiving training or undergoing treatment in a hospital or sanatorium or other institution. Deductions from the pension may be made, however, to cover the cost of his maintenance at the medical institution. Additional sums may be given to defray expenses incidental to treatment or training.

Disabilities not permanent are pensioned, but only temporarily, until the degree of the permanent disability is established. For disability of not less than 20 per cent a gratuity or temporary allowance up to a maximum of £500 (\$2,433.25) may be given in lieu of pension.

If the officer's medical unfitness is not attributable to or aggravated by military or naval service, and is not the result of his own negligence, he may be granted a gratuity or temporary allowance up to a maximum of £300 (\$1,459.95).

**SCHEDULE 36.—Great Britain, Army. Retired pay to which officers not holding permanent commissions in regular forces are eligible on account of disability.**

[Data from Draft of a Royal Warrant for the Retired Pay of Officers Disabled and for the Pensions of the Families and Relatives of Officers Deceased, and for the Pensions of Nurses Disabled in Consequence of the Present War, p. 10.]

[Amounts outside parentheses are in pounds; amounts within parentheses are in dollars.]

Rank.	Amount payable for total disability.	
	Weekly.	Annually.
Major general.....	(32.76)	350 (1,703.28)
Brigadier general.....	(30.42)	325 (1,581.61)
Colonel.....	(25.74)	275 (1,338.29)
Lieutenant colonel.....	(23.40)	250 (1,216.63)
Major.....	(21.06)	225 (1,094.96)
Captain, lieutenant, second lieutenant.....	(16.38)	175 (851.64)

To officers totally disabled and needing the constant attendance of a second person £78 (\$379.59) a year is payable in addition to these amounts.

Other degrees of disability, from 80 per cent, graded by tens, to 20 per cent, are pensioned at rates proportionate to those above.

SCHEDULE 37.—*Great Britain, Army. Retired pay to which officers holding permanent commissions in regular forces are eligible on account of disability.*

[Data from Royal Warrant for the Pay, Appointment, Promotion, and Noneffective Pay of the Army, 1914, p. 146; Draft of a Royal Warrant for the Retired Pay of Officers Disabled and for the Pensions of the Families and Relatives of Officers Deceased and for the Pensions of Nurses Disabled in Consequence of the Present War, p. 10.]

[Amounts outside parentheses are in pounds; amounts within parentheses are in dollars.]

Rank.	Pensions payable for—			
	Wounds received in action.		Wounds received otherwise than in action.	
	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.
Major general.....	(32.76)	350 (1,703.28)	Special.	Special.
Brigadier general.....	(32.76)	350 (1,703.28)	Special.	Special.
Colonel.....	(28.08)	300 (1,459.95)	(23.40)	250 (1,216.63)
Lieutenant colonel.....	(28.08)	300 (1,459.95)	(23.40)	250 (1,216.63)
Major.....	(18.72)	200 (973.30)	(14.04)	150 (729.98)
Captain.....	(9.36)	100 (486.65)	(7.02)	75 (364.99)
Lieutenant and second lieutenant.....	(6.55)	70 (340.66)	(4.68)	50 (243.33)

NOTE.—Officers entitled to disability pension at the rates above receive in addition to this pension a flat rate for total disability which is the same for all ranks and amounts to £100 (\$486.65) a year, £1 18 s. 5 7/13d. (\$9.36) a week. For lesser disabilities the flat rate varies in proportion to the disability.

To officers totally disabled and requiring the constant attendance of a second person an additional annual pension of £78 (\$379.59) is payable.

An officer in receipt of a service pension as a soldier, but holding no permanent commission in the regular forces, may be paid the flat rate of £100 (\$486.65), which is the same for all ranks, but varies with the degree of disability, and in addition the service pension to which he is entitled. For men of class 5, privates, gunners, etc., this service pension varies from 4 s. 8d. (\$1.14) a week for 14 years of service, to 7s. 7d. (\$1.84) a week for 21 years of service (from \$59.28 to \$95.68 a year). The rates of service pension for noncommissioned officers are given on page 126.

#### PENSIONS TO DEPENDENTS OF MEN DECEASED IN CONSEQUENCE OF THE WAR.

The most striking feature of the new system for pensions in Great Britain in operation since April 1, 1917, is its provision for all classes of dependents and the alternative offered to widows of pension on a basis of prewar earnings of the husband instead of pension on the ordinary scale.

If a soldier, sailor, or marine is killed while in the performance of military or naval duty, dies as a result of wounds or injuries received in the performance of such duty within seven years of receiving such wounds or injuries, or dies of disease certified as contracted or commencing while on active service within seven years of his removal from duty on account of such disease, providing his death was not

caused by his serious negligence or misconduct, his widow, children, and other dependents may receive a pension.

If the soldier, sailor, or marine died of wounds, injuries, or disease not attributable to or aggravated by military or naval service, and not due to his serious negligence or misconduct, his widow only may receive a pension. This is temporary, payable during the period of the war and for 12 months afterwards, and amounts to 15s. (\$3.65) a week.

The permanent pension payable to a widow equals one-half the sum her husband would have received had he been disabled in the highest degree. Although an unmarried wife of a soldier, sailor, or marine is eligible to the same separation allowance as a wife during the man's service, her pension in case of his death is smaller than a wife's. If she has before the war been wholly or substantially dependent on the man and has been drawing separation allowance as for a wife, a pension of 10s. (\$2.43) a week can be given her under certain circumstances. It is payable while she has children of the man in her care. After they cease to be in her care she may draw the pension for the period of the war and for 12 months afterwards, or for 12 months after the children leave her charge, whichever is the later date. If subsequently, because of infirmity or age, she becomes incapable of supporting herself, the pension may be renewed for the period of incapacity. A separated wife may be paid the same amount the husband had given her, under court order or otherwise, up to a maximum of 10s. (\$2.43) a week.

Some additional provisions are made for widows. Three pounds (\$14.60) are allowed for funeral expenses for her husband. When a widow reaches the age of 45 her pension is increased 1s. 3d. (30 cents) a week. She is encouraged to submit to training advantageous to her and may receive an allowance of 12s. 6d. (\$3.04) a week for not more than 13 weeks while she is undergoing such training. If she remarries, the pension ceases; but a year's pension may be paid as gratuity.

A widow whose husband was receiving a disability pension of not less than 10s. (\$2.43) a week, but whose death does not entitle her to a pension, may nevertheless be granted a pension of not more than one-half the sum her husband had been receiving. The maximum in any case is the amount she could receive under ordinary rules as the widow of a man of her husband's rank. She must have been living with the man at the time of his death; her pension ceases on remarriage.

If a widow can prove that the pension granted under ordinary circumstances, together with children's pensions, equals less than one-half of the pre-war earnings of her husband, up to a maximum of 75s. (\$18.24) a week, she may be granted, in lieu of ordinary pensions for herself and children, a sum equal to one-half of these pre-war

earnings. Under this arrangement her maximum pension would be 37s. 6d. (\$9.12) a week.

Children of widows, or of unmarried widows, and of separated wives receive a pension equal to the sum they would have received had their fathers been totally incapacitated. Children of separated wives are eligible for the pension even if the father had not contributed to their mother's support. Motherless children receive pensions at somewhat higher rates. If no two of the children are under the care of the same person, this rate is 7s. (\$1.70) each; if two or more are under the care of one person, the rate for the first is 7s. (\$1.70) and for each of the others 6s. (\$1.46). Illegitimate children, maintained under court order, including children whose mothers were not supported by the father, may be paid 5s. (\$1.22) a week each. Children are eligible for pensions up to the age of 16, and beyond that age if they are being educated at a secondary or technical school or a university; or if he is incapable through mental or physical infirmity of earning a living. Children's pensions are continued even if the mother remarries and thus loses her own pension.

In addition to widows and children, parents of the deceased may also receive a pension if they were wholly or partly dependent on him for support. Moreover, if the man was at the commencement of the war an apprentice, who had spent one year at his trade, or had been articled to a profession, or was qualifying for a profession at a school, college, university, or hospital, his parents may receive the pension if they become at any time incapable of self-support by reason of infirmity or age. If the mother of the deceased is widowed during the war and becomes incapable of self-support through infirmity or age, the pension may be granted her without regard to pre-war dependence. The sum payable to one or both parents is the same, and the maximum is 15s. (\$3.65) a week, or, if they were dependent on the deceased for support, the amount of such dependence, whichever amount is less.

Other dependents, eligible for separation allowance, may be granted a temporary gratuity of 5s. (\$1.22) a week, if they are in pecuniary need and incapable of self-support, for the period of incapacity and for 26 weeks afterwards.

Any other dependents may be granted a gratuity equal to a year's pay of the deceased, or an amount equal to a year's separation allowance and allotment, as such allowance and allotment were last paid or payable.

A gratuity of 26 weeks' pension may be granted, on the marriage or remarriage of a female dependent, including a separated wife, but the pension itself ceases.

**SCHEDULE 38.—Great Britain.** Pensions to dependents of enlisted men deceased in consequence of war.

<sup>1</sup> Data from Royal Warrant for the Pensions of Soldiers Disabled and of the Families and Dependents of Soldiers Deceased, together with Order in Council and Regulations for the Pension of British Seamen and Marines, their Widows, Relatives, and Dependents, pp. 4, 15.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in shillings and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Amounts of pension payable on behalf of men in lower grades of the Army and Navy, and of Marines.

Amounts of pension payable on behalf of men in lower grades of the Army and Navy, and of Marines.									
Beneficiaries.		Privates, etc., Class V.	Noncommissioned officers, Class IV.	Noncommissioned officers, Class III.	Noncommissioned officers, Class II.	Noncommissioned officers, Class I, warrant officers, Class II.	Noncommissioned officers, Class I, warrant officers, Class I.	Warrant officer, Class II.	Warrant officer, Class I.
All ratings below second-class petty officer.		Second-class petty officer.	First-class petty officer (O. S.) (N. S.).	Chief petty officer.	Color and staff sergeants.	Color and staff sergeants.	Warrant officer, Class II.	Warrant officer, Class I.	Warrant officer, Class I.
All rates below corporal.		Leading rates and corporals.	Sergeants.		Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.
Weekly.	Annually.								
s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.	s. d.
13 9	{ 173.68	{ 15 0	{ 16 3	{ 17 6	{ 18 9	{ 19.52	{ 223.12	{ 21 3	{ 263.84
{ 3.34	{ 3.65	{ 3.35	{ 3.35	{ 4.26	{ 4.36	{ 4.36	{ 5.17	{ 5.17	{ 6.17
18 9	{ 237.12	{ 20 0	{ 21 3	{ 22 6	{ 23 9	{ 23 9	{ 300.56	{ 26 3	{ 332.28
{ 4.56	{ 4.86	{ 2.72	{ 5.17	{ 5.47	{ 5.78	{ 5.78	{ 6.39	{ 6.39	{ 7.39
22 11	{ 289.64	{ 24 2	{ 25 5	{ 26 8	{ 27 11	{ 27 11	{ 353.08	{ 30 5	{ 384.80
{ 6.57	{ 5.88	{ 305.76	{ 6.18	{ 6.49	{ 6.79	{ 6.79	{ 7.49	{ 7.49	{ 8.49
26 3	{ 332.28	{ 27 6	{ 347.88	{ 28 9	{ 30 0	{ 30 0	{ 379.60	{ 31 3	{ 426.92
{ 6.39	{ 6.69	{ 6.69	{ 6.99	{ 6.99	{ 7.30	{ 7.30	{ 7.90	{ 7.90	{ 8.21

Each subsequent child increases the number of months of lactation as follows: 84, 64, 60, 61, a week.

Each subsequent child, irrespective of rank or rating of father, first child, \$1.70 a week; each subsequent child, 6s. (\$1.46). Mother's children irrespective of rank or rating of father: First child, 7s. (\$1.70) a week; each subsequently incapable of earning a living because of infirmity or age, 15s. (\$3.65) a week, or amount of prewar Parent or parents, previously dependent on a soldier, or mother subsequently incapable of earning a living because of infirmity or age, 15s. (\$3.65) a week.

dependence, whichever is less.

Divorced wives previously supported by the man receive the same rates for themselves and their children as unmarried wives. Separated wives not previously supported by the man receive the same rates for themselves and their children as unmarried wives. If no children of the man are under her care, she receives her own allowance for the period of the war and 12 months afterwards, or for 12 months after ceasing to have the children under her care.

the man get nothing, but the children's allowances may be paid. If the man gets a child, both those in whose favor an affiliation order was in force, and those belonging to a woman not married to or supported by the father, providing there is satisfactory proof that the man was their father, receive 5s. (\$1.22) a week. Any other defendant who would be liable for such an allowance, more than was necessary to support a son or daughter, would be liable for the difference. In this case, the man would be liable for the difference, and the woman would be liable for the difference.

Any other dependent who received a separation allowance, or who was eligible for such an allowance, may be paid \$5. (\$1.22) a week, or the amount of prewar dependence, whichever is less, for the duration of the incapacity of a dependent for a gratuity of an amount not less than one year's pay of the deceased.

## DEPENDENTS OF OFFICERS.

To be eligible for a pension a widow must have been married to an officer before the receipt of the wound or injury which caused his death or before his removal from duty on account of the contraction or aggravation of the disease which caused his death. The widow of a permanent regular officer married after the contraction of the disease which caused the man's death may be pensioned, however, if the officer lived at least one year after his marriage or if it can be shown that he was manifestly in good health at the date of his marriage.

The amount of pension is dependent not only upon the rank of the officer, but also upon the cause of his death. A widow of a man killed in action or suffering a violent death due directly to war service or killed in flying service may be paid not only the largest pension, but also a gratuity amounting to from one to four times the ordinary widow's pension for a year.

Legitimate children of officers are eligible for pensions at rates varying with the rank and cause of death of the father. Such pensions are payable to a daughter until she is 21, or marries, and to a son until he is 18, or until he is 21 if he is an apprentice at nominal wages, or is attending a technical school, secondary school, or university. Children in distressed circumstances who are incapable because of mental or physical infirmity of making adequate exertion for their own support may receive pensions beyond the ordinary age limit. The infirmity must have begun in the officer's lifetime and before the child reached the age when pensions ordinarily cease.

Children whose fathers were killed in action, or in flying service, or suffered violent death due wholly to war service may receive, in addition to the pension, a gratuity in amount one-third of the similar gratuity payable to the widow.

Each child over the age of 9 may receive, in addition to all pensions and gratuities an annual education allowance of £35 (\$170.33) as long as the minister of pensions is satisfied with the character of education he is receiving.

Motherless children receive pensions at a somewhat higher rate, £40 (\$194.66) for one child, and £35 (\$170.33) for each subsequent child, if two or more are living together. In addition, motherless children are eligible for education allowance, and also for gratuity if their fathers have been killed in action or in flying service. A motherless child of a second lieutenant who had met his death under these circumstances would thus be eligible for pension at £40 (\$194.66) a year, education allowance of £35 (\$170.33), and gratuity of £33 6s. 8d. (\$162.22). The first year after the father's death the

income would be £108 6s. 8d. (\$527.21), and in subsequent years £75 (\$364.99).

Instead of receiving a pension at the usual rates for herself and her children, a widow may choose prewar income as a basis. If she can prove that her pensions and her children's are less than one-half of her husband's prewar earnings up to £300 (\$1,459.95) plus one-fourth of prewar earnings between £300 (\$1,459.95) and £600 (\$2,919.90), she may be paid a sum equal to one-half of prewar earnings up to a maximum of £450 (\$2,189.95). Her pension under this plan would thus be at the most £225 (\$1,094.97).

An officer's widow not eligible for pension under ordinary circumstances may be granted an amount not less than one nor more than three years' pay of the deceased providing the officer died while in full pay or during the war after removal from full pay because of the injury or disease which caused his death. A widow of an officer on retired pay of not less than £70 (\$340.66) at the time of his death, if his death does not entitle her to pension, may, nevertheless, be paid a pension in amount not more than one-half the deceased officer's retired pay, but in no case more than the sum payable to a widow of a man whose death was caused by illness due to the war.

If a deceased officer has left daughters only and no widow, the daughters may receive the pension payable to widows under the warrant in force before the new regulations came into effect.<sup>1</sup> This pension may be paid in lieu of the ordinary children's pensions, and continues until the last surviving daughter is disqualified by marriage.

A parent or parents of an officer may receive pensions as the minister of pensions may decide, taking into consideration prewar dependence, age, infirmity, and pecuniary need. Sisters and brothers, wholly or partially dependent on an officer, may be pensioned at the same rates and up to the same ages as children of the officer. If sisters and brothers are not eligible for pension under ordinary rules a gratuity of one-half the sum of the widow's pension may nevertheless be granted them. Although pensions to wives and children are granted irrespective of need, pensions to all other dependents are contingent on need having been proved. Pensions to all female dependents cease on marriage or remarriage. If the widow of an officer remarries, and becomes again a widow, her pension may be restored if her pecuniary circumstances justify the restoration, and if she is otherwise eligible for the pension.

<sup>1</sup> Pension payable annually to widow of officers: Field marshal or general officer (including brigadier general, £120 (\$583.98); colonel, £100 (\$486.65); lieutenant colonel, £90 (\$437.99); major, £70 (\$340.66); major, medical corps, £90 (\$437.99); captain, lieutenant, second lieutenant, £50 (\$243.33).

SCHEDULE 39.—*Great Britain. Pensions for dependents of officers deceased in consequence of war.*  
 [Data from the Draft of a Royal Warrant for the Retired Pay of Officers Disbanded, and for the Pensions of the Families and Relatives of Officers Deceased, and for the Pensions of Nurses Disabled in Consequence of the Present War, p. 10.]  
 [Figures outside of parentheses in pounds, shillings, and pence; figures in parentheses in dollars.]

Rank.	Pension and gratuity at highest rates. <sup>1</sup>						Pension at ordinary rates. <sup>2</sup>					
	Pension.			Gratuity. <sup>3</sup>			Widow.			Pension at ordinary rates. <sup>2</sup>		
	Widow.	Weekly.	Annually.	Each child. <sup>4</sup>	Widow.	Each child.	Weekly.	Annually.	£	Weekly.	Annually.	£
Field marshal	900	£ 3. 893. 20	...	(2. 81)	30	£ 3. 500	1,166 13 4	...	600	...	...	25
General	(74. 87)	(3. 893. 20)	...	(2. 81)	(116. 00)	(17, 032. 75)	(5. 677. 58)	...	(2, 919. 90)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Lieutenant general	(56. 15)	(2. 919. 90)	...	(2. 81)	(146. 00)	(3, 000 0 0)	...	(42. 11)	(2, 189. 93)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Major general	(46. 79)	(2. 433. 25)	...	(2. 81)	(146. 00)	(2, 000 0 0)	(666 13 4	...	375	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Brigadier general	(37. 43)	(1. 946. 60)	...	(2. 81)	(116. 00)	(1, 100 0 0)	(3, 241. 33)	...	(1, 824. 91)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Colonel <sup>5</sup>	(28. 07)	(1. 459. 95)	...	(2. 81)	(116. 00)	(5, 333. 15)	(1, 784. 95)	...	(1, 459. 95)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Lieutenant colonel <sup>6</sup>	(18. 72)	(973. 30)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(2, 919. 80)	(973. 30)	...	(28. 07)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Major	(16. 84)	(875. 97)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(2, 159. 33)	(729. 98)	...	(1, 459. 95)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Captain	(13. 10)	(681. 31)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(1, 459. 55)	(486. 65)	...	(1, 094. 96)	...	(2. 34)	(121. 66)
Lieutenant	(9. 36)	(486. 65)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(1, 216. 63)	(405. 54)	...	(150	...	(1. 87)	(97. 33)
Second Lieutenant	(9. 36)	(486. 65)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(461 13 4	(7. 02)	...	(729. 98)	...	(1. 87)	(97. 33)
	(9. 36)	(486. 65)	...	(2. 25)	(116. 80)	(681. 31)	(227. 10)	...	(135	...	(1. 87)	(97. 33)
						(486. 65)	(162. 23)	...	(12. 63)	...	(1. 87)	(97. 33)
						(486. 65)	(162. 23)	...	(12. 63)	...	(1. 87)	(97. 33)

<sup>1</sup> Payable if officer is (a) killed in action, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to war service or is killed or dies of injuries under proper authority, or (b) dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received, or dies from illness which is certified as directly traceable to fatigue, privation, or exposure incident to active operations in the field within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such illness, or (c) dies in consequence of injuries received in the performance of military or naval duty otherwise than under (a) within seven years of having so injured.

<sup>2</sup> Payable if the officer (a) dies of disease attributable to or aggravated by military service other than under subsection (b) above within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such disease, or (b) dies of injuries attributable to military service other than under subsections (a) or (c) mentioned in note 1 above, and not through his own negligence or misconduct within seven years after having been first removed from duty on account of such injuries.

<sup>3</sup> Payable in addition to pension if the officer is killed in action, or suffers violent death due directly and wholly to war service or is killed or dies of injuries sustained on flying duty or while being carried on duty in aircraft under proper authority, or dies within seven years from wounds or injuries so received.

<sup>4</sup> All children 9 years of age and over may receive an annual educational allowance also of £25 (\$170.33).

<sup>5</sup> Colonel: A colonel who has been employed as a substantive colonel if a combatant officer, or in the rank of colonel if a medical, veterinary, or departmental officer.

<sup>6</sup> Including colonel not employed as above.

<sup>7</sup> Note.—Motherless children, irrespective of rank of father: First child £40 (\$194.66); subsequent children (if two or more are under the care of one person) £35 (\$170.33). Such children also receive the gratuity according to rank of father if he has died under circumstances mentioned in note 3, above. (See also note 4, above.)

## AUSTRALIA.

## SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.

Separation allowances for wives and families of men from Australia are on two bases, dependent on whether the man was a British Army reservist or a member of the Australian imperial forces. The rates for British Army reservists do not include allotments from pay which must be made at the rate required of soldiers in Great Britain.<sup>1</sup> No special arrangements are made for separation allowances to dependents other than wives and children, but the rates fixed for wives and children are the maxima for other dependents. A member of the Australian imperial forces is compelled by an order of the governor general in council to allot to his family a portion of his pay.<sup>2</sup> The minimum is two-fifths of daily rate of pay (exclusive of deferred pay) for the wife, three-fifths of daily rate for a wife and one or more children, and one-fifth for an illegitimate child. The man may allot more if he chooses. If the man's total pay is less than 10s. (\$2.43) a day, a separation allowance also is payable. For a wife this is 1s. 5d. (\$0.34), and for each child 4½d. (9 cents) a day. Separation allowance may be paid if the wife is maintained under court order. If the man makes the required allotment from pay, an unmarried wife also may receive the separation allowance.

Besides sons and daughters, adopted children, children of a widowed sister totally dependent on the member, brothers and sisters under 16, or children of a separated wife, are eligible for separation allowance. Allotments of pay must be made for these children before they are eligible for allowance.

Allowances are continued for all children until they reach the age of 16 years.

A mother, widowed sister, and invalid father whose wife is dead, provided they are not in receipt of invalid, old-age, or war pensions, if they were previously dependent on the soldier may also be granted separation allowances at the rate fixed for a wife.

No separation allowances are payable to wife, child, or other dependent if the man's pay is 10s. (\$2.43) or over a day; and the maximum of separation allowance and of member's pay is fixed at 10s. (\$2.43).

Separation allowances and allotments from pay are continued if the man becomes a prisoner of war.

In case of the death of a member of the imperial forces, separation allowances and allotments of pay continue for two months from the date of notification of death or until a war pension is payable, whichever date is the earlier.

<sup>1</sup> See p. 116.

<sup>2</sup> Apparently this order includes also commissioned officers.

SCHEDULE 40.—*Australia. Australian imperial forces divided into classes on the basis of daily pay subsequent to embarkation.*

Class I. Pay, including deferred pay, 6s. (\$1.46) a day. Deferred pay, 1s. (24 cents).

Acting bombardier.	Bugler.
Lance corporal.	Drummer.
Gunner.	Cook.
Sapper.	Batman.
Private.	Stretcher bearer.
Bandsman.	Cleaner and wagonman, mechanical transport.
Collar maker.	Artificer.
Saddler.	Storeman of headquarters.
Wheeler.	Machine-gun company.
Trumpeter.	

Class II. Pay, including deferred pay, 7s. (\$1.70) a day. Deferred pay, 1s. (24 cents).

Shoeing smith and driver (including drivers of motor vehicles other than motorcycles and those specified in Class III).

Class III. Pay, including deferred pay, 8s. (\$1.94) a day. Deferred pay, 1s. (24 cents).

Mechanical transport:

Workshop fitter.
Turner.
Blacksmith.
Wheeler.
Electrician.

Driver in motor transport units and of all motor lorries.

Mechanic (flying unit and A. M. C. motor lorries).

Class IV. Pay, including deferred pay, 9s. (\$2.19) a day. Deferred pay, 1s. 6d. (36 cents).

Second corporal bombardier.

Class V. Pay, including deferred pay, 10s. (\$2.43) a day.

Corporal.

Armorer corporal.

Band corporal.

Shoeing smith corporal.

Signaling or pay and orderly room corporal.

Class VI. Pay, including deferred pay, 10s. 6d. (\$2.55) a day. Deferred pay, 2s. (\$0.49).

Transport and flying units.	Transport sergeant.
Sergeant.	Armorer sergeant.
Pioneer sergeant.	Band sergeant.
Signaling sergeant.	Sergeant trumpeter.

Class VII. Pay, 11s. 6d. (\$2.80) a day, including deferred pay. Deferred pay, 2s. (49 cents).

Squadron quartermaster sergeant.	Collar maker sergeant.
Battery quartermaster sergeant.	Wheeler sergeant.
Troop quartermaster sergeant.	Saddler sergeant.
Company quartermaster sergeant.	Sergeants of mechanical transport and flying units.
Orderly room sergeant.	
Farrier sergeant.	

Class VIII. Pay, including deferred pay, 12s. (\$2.92) a day. Deferred pay, 2s. (49 cents).	
Staff sergeant major.	Color sergeant.
Squadron sergeant major.	Staff sergeant.
Battery sergeant major.	Armorer staff sergeant.
Troop sergeant major.	Sergeant cook.
Company sergeant major.	Wheeler staff sergeant.
Farrier quartermaster sergeant.	Farrier staff sergeant.
Quartermaster sergeant (flying unit).	Saddler staff sergeant.
Class IX. Pay, including deferred pay, 13s. (\$3.16) a day. Deferred pay, 2s. 6d. (61 cents).	
Brigade or regimental sergeant major.	
Quartermaster sergeant.	
Armament artificer.	
Foreman artificer (mechanical transport).	
Foreman mechanic (flying unit).	
Warrant officer.	
Staff quartermaster sergeant.	
Class X. Pay, including deferred pay, 14s. (\$3.41) a day. Deferred pay, 2s. 6d. (61 cents).	
Staff sergeant (wireless).	
Class XI. Adjutant and quartermaster, according to rank:	
Class XII. Pay, including deferred pay, 17s. 6d. (\$4.26) a day. Deferred pay, 3s. (73 cents).	
Lieutenant.	
Second lieutenant.	
Class XIII. Pay, including deferred pay, £1 2s. 6d. (\$5.47) a day. Deferred pay, 3s. 6d. (85 cents).	
Captain.	
Class XIV. Pay, including deferred pay, £1 10s. (\$7.30) a day. Deferred pay, 5s. (\$1.22).	
Major.	
Class XV. Pay, including deferred pay, £1 17s. 6. (\$9.12) a day. Deferred pay, 7s. 6d. (\$1.82).	
Lieutenant colonel.	
Class XVI. Pay, including deferred pay, £2 5s. (\$11.07) a day. Deferred pay, 8s. (\$1.95).	
Colonel.	
Brigadier general.	
Class XVII. Pay, £3 5s. 9.4d. (\$16) a day.	
Major general.	

SCHEDULE 41.—*Australia. Separation allowances for wives and children of members of the Australian imperial forces.*<sup>1</sup>

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Class 1.				Class 2.			
	Weekly allotment from pay.	Weekly separation allowance.	Total.		Weekly allotment from pay.	Weekly separation allowance.	Total.	
			Weekly.	Annually.			Weekly.	Annually.
Wife only.....	£ s. d. 0 14 0 (3.41)	£ s. d. 0 9 11 (2.41)	£ s. d. 1 3 11 (5.82)	..... (302.64)	£ s. d. 0 16 9.6 (4.09)	£ s. d. 0 9 11 (2.41)	£ s. d. 1 6 8.6 (6.50)	..... (338.00)
Wife and 1 child.....	1 1 0 (5.11)	0 12 6½ (3.95)	1 13 6½ (8.16)	..... (424.32)	1 5 2.4 (6.13)	0 12 6.5 (3.05)	1 17 8.9 (9.18)	..... (477.36)
Wife and 2 children..	1 1 0 (5.11)	0 15 2 (3.69)	1 16 2 (8.80)	..... (457.60)	1 5 2.4 (6.13)	0 15 2 (3.69)	2 0 4.4 (9.82)	..... (510.64)
Wife and 3 children..	1 1 0 (5.11)	0 17 9½ (4.33)	1 18 9½ (9.44)	..... (490.88)	1 5 2.4 (6.13)	0 17 9.5 (4.33)	2 2 11.9 (10.46)	..... (543.92)
Wife and 4 children <sup>2</sup> ..	1 1 0 (5.11)	1 0 5 (4.97)	2 1 5 (10.08)	..... (524.16)	1 5 2.4 (6.13)	1 0 5 (4.97)	2 5 7.4 (11.10)	..... (577.20)
Each illegitimate child.....	0 7 0 (1.70)	0 2 7½ (0.64)	0 9 7½ (2.34)	..... (121.68)	0 8 4.8 (2.04)	0 2 7.5 (0.64)	0 11 0.3 (2.68)	..... (139.36)

Beneficiaries.	Class 3.				Class 4.			
	Weekly allotment from pay.	Weekly separation allowance.	Total.		Weekly allotment from pay.	Weekly separation allowance.	Total.	
			Weekly.	Annually.			Weekly.	Annually.
Wife only.....	£ s. d. 0 19 7.2 (4.77)	£ s. d. 0 9 11 (2.41)	£ s. d. 1 9 6.2 (7.18)	..... (373.36)	£ s. d. 1 1 0 (5.11)	£ s. d. 0 7 0 (1.70)	£ s. d. 1 8 0 (6.81)	..... (354.12)
Wife and 1 child.....	1 9 4.8 (7.15)	0 12 6.5 (3.05)	2 1 11.3 (10.20)	..... (530.40)	1 11 6 (7.66)	0 7 0 (1.70)	1 18 6 (9.36)	..... (487.24)
Wife and 2 children..	1 9 4.8 (7.15)	0 14 0 (3.41)	2 3 4.8 (10.50)	..... (549.12)	1 11 6 (7.66)	0 7 0 (1.70)	1 18 6 (9.36)	..... (487.24)
Wife and 3 children..	1 9 4.8 (7.15)	0 14 0 (3.41)	2 3 4.8 (10.50)	..... (549.12)	1 11 6 (7.66)	0 7 0 (1.70)	1 18 6 (9.36)	..... (487.24)
Wife and 4 children <sup>2</sup> ..	1 9 4.8 (7.15)	0 14 0 (3.41)	2 3 4.8 (10.50)	..... (549.12)	1 11 6 (7.66)	0 7 0 (1.70)	1 18 6 (9.36)	..... (487.24)
Each illegitimate child.....	0 9 9.6 (2.38)	0 2 7.5 (0.64)	0 12 5.1 (3.02)	..... (157.04)	0 10 6 (2.55)	0 2 7½ (0.64)	0 12 1½ (3.19)	..... (165.83)

<sup>1</sup> Data from Statutory Rules and Orders, Commonwealth of Australia, 1917, No. 49.

<sup>2</sup> Subsequent children receive allowances as follows: Class 1. Fifth and sixth child, 2s. 7.5d (\$0.14) each; seventh and subsequent, no allowance. Class 2. Fifth child, 7d. (\$0.14); subsequent children, no allowance. Class 3. Subsequent children no allowance. Class 4. Subsequent children no allowance.

SCHEDULE 42.—*Australia. Separation allowances for wives and children of British Army reservists.*<sup>1</sup>

[Source: Regulations for the issue of army separation allowance, allotments of pay and family allowance during the present war, p. 59.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence. Amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Allowances payable. <sup>1</sup>							
	Classes 20 and 19. <sup>2</sup>		Class 17. <sup>2</sup>		Class 16. <sup>2</sup>		Class 15. <sup>2</sup>	
	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.
£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
Wife only.....	0 9 11 (2.41)	0 11 8 (125.32)	0 11 8 (2.84)	0 16 8 (147.68)	0 16 11 (4.11)	0 16 11 (213.72)	0 18 1 (4.40)	0 18 1 (228.80)
Wife and 1 child.....	0 14 11 (3.63)	0 14 11 (188.76)	0 16 8 (4.05)	0 16 8 (210.60)	1 1 11 (5.33)	1 1 11 (277.16)	1 3 1 (5.61)	1 3 1 (291.72)
Wife and 2 children.....	0 18 5 (4.48)	0 18 5 (232.96)	1 0 2 (4.91)	1 0 2 (255.32)	1 5 5 (6.18)	1 5 5 (321.36)	1 6 7 (6.47)	1 6 7 (336.44)
Wife and 3 children.....	1 0 5 (4.97)	1 0 5 (258.44)	1 2 2 (5.39)	1 2 2 (280.28)	1 7 5 (6.67)	1 7 5 (346.84)	1 8 7 (6.95)	1 8 7 (361.40)
Wife and 4 children.....	1 2 5 (5.45)	1 2 5 (283.40)	1 4 2 (5.88)	1 4 2 (305.76)	1 9 5 (7.16)	1 9 5 (372.32)	1 10 7 (7.44)	1 10 7 (386.88)

<sup>1</sup> For allotments from pay see p. 116.

<sup>2</sup> For classification of rank see p. 119.

Each subsequent child, irrespective of rank of father, 2s. (49 cents) a week.  
Each motherless child, 5s. (1.22) a week.

## DISABILITY PENSIONS.

Payments to a disabled man in Australia vary with his rank and with the extent of disability. Pensions are payable at the same rate to reservists called for active service who were at the commencement of the war bona fide residents of Australia as to members of the imperial forces.

Wives, including unmarried wives, and children up to the age of 16 are pensioned. Illegitimate children and grandchildren are included as children. If a child over 16 is incapable of earning a living, the pension may be continued at a rate fixed by the commissioner, the maximum not to exceed the rate that would be payable to the widow if the man had died. Other dependents also are eligible for pension of such amounts as the commissioner of pensions or his deputy may fix. The sum of pensions payable to all such dependents must not exceed by more than £2. (\$9.73) a fortnight the amount that would be payable to the widow in case the man had died. Pensions to wife, child, father, mother, grandfather, or grandmother are issuable whether or not the beneficiary is capable of earning a living. Pensions to other dependents cease after two years if the beneficiary is capable of self-support.

Rates for partial incapacity are fixed by the commissioner of pensions or his deputy. A lump sum payment may, at the discretion of the authorities, be substituted for a pension if the disability is assessed

at 30 per cent or less. In assessing pensions, any other pension (under imperial or under State act) to which a member of the forces or his dependent is entitled by reason of his incapacity resulting from the war shall be taken into account.

SCHEDULE 43.—*Australia. Category of disabilities.*

Maximum rate:

- Loss of both legs.
- Loss of both feet.
- Loss of both arms.
- Loss of both hands.
- Loss of arm and leg.
- Loss of hand and foot.
- Loss of both eyes.

Loss of one eye, together with loss of leg, foot, hand, or arm.

Maximum rate for six months, thereafter three-fourths of the maximum rate:

- Loss of leg or foot.
- Loss of hand or arm.

Half the maximum rate:

Loss of one eye.

A leg, foot, hand, arm, or eye shall be deemed to be lost if it is rendered permanently and wholly useless.

SCHEDULE 44.—*Australia. Pensions for disability.*

[Source: Acts of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of Australia, 1916, p. 131 (War Pensions Act, 1914-1916, first schedule).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Rate of pay of the members of the forces per day.	Amounts of pension payable upon total incapacity.		Rate of pay of the members of the forces per day.	Amounts of pension payable upon total incapacity.	
	Fortnightly.	Annually.		Fortnightly.	Annually.
£ s. d. 0 6 0 (1.46)	£ s. d. 3 0 0 (14.59)	£ s. d. (379.34)	£ s. d. 0 13 0 (3.16)	£ s. d. 3 14 0 (18.00)	£ s. d. (468.00)
0 7 0 (1.70)	3 2 0 (15.08)	(392.08)	0 17 6 (4.26)	4 0 0 (19.46)	(505.96)
0 9 0 (2.19)	3 6 0 (16.05)	(417.30)	1 2 6 (5.47)	4 5 0 (20.68)	(537.68)
0 10 0 (2.43)	3 8 0 (16.54)	(430.04)	1 10 0 (7.30)	4 15 0 (23.11)	(600.86)
0 10 6 (2.55)	3 9 0 (16.78)	(436.28)	1 17 6 (9.12)	5 5 0 (25.54)	(664.04)
0 11 6 (2.80)	3 11 0 (17.27)	(449.02)	2 5 0 (10.95)	5 15 0 (27.97)	(727.22)
0 12 0 (2.92)	3 12 0 (17.51)	(455.26)	2 10 0 (12.16)	6 0 0 (29.19)	(758.94)
			and upward		

A man so disabled as to need the constant attendance of another person, may receive in addition to his disability pension £1 (\$4.87) per fortnight if he is unmarried or if his wife is dead or a permanent invalid, in case he has not himself the means to pay an attendant.

The wife of a disabled man receives in addition one-half of the amount payable to the disabled man.

Children of a totally incapacitated member of the forces receive fortnightly pensions as follows: First child, 20s. (\$4.87) per fortnight (\$126.53 a year); second child, 15s. (\$3.65) per fortnight (\$94.90 a year); third and subsequent children, 10s. (\$2.43) fortnightly (\$63.26 a year).

Other dependents may receive such sums as the commissioner of pensions or his deputy may assess. In the aggregate, they may not exceed the amount of pension payable to the widow on the death of a member, plus £2 (\$9.73) per fortnight.

No one dependent of the member may receive more than an amount equal to the widow's pension.

For partial incapacity, the rates assessed are determined by the commissioner of pensions or his deputy, who must take into consideration the nature and probable duration of the incapacity. For incapacity of 30 per cent or less, a lump sum payment may be made.

#### PENSIONS TO DEPENDENTS OF MEN DECEASED IN CONSEQUENCE OF WAR.

Wives and unmarried wives who were wholly or partly supported by the deceased are eligible for pensions upon the death of a member of the forces. Pensions at the same rates are payable to dependents of men of the imperial forces and to reservists resident in Australia at the commencement of hostilities. The rates vary with the pay of the deceased.

Children, legitimate and illegitimate (providing the illegitimate child is born before the occurrence of the event resulting in the man's death, or within nine months after that event) are eligible for pension, as are also grandchildren and illegitimate grandchildren if they were dependent upon the soldier within 12 months prior to his enlistment. Orphan children are granted a larger pension than those whose mothers are living. Payments to children ordinarily cease when the child is 16 years of age, or two years after the date of the commencement of pension, whichever is later. A child of 16 unable to earn a living may be granted a pension by the commissioner, in amount not exceeding the widow's rate of pension.

Other members of the deceased man's family, dependent on his earnings at any time within 12 months prior to his enlistment—parents who, though not dependent on the man prior to his death, become subsequently without adequate means of support, and illegitimate parents or grandparents—also may be awarded a pension. In the aggregate such pensions to dependents must not exceed the widow's pension plus £2 (\$9.73) a fortnight. In fixing pensions the commissioner must take into account any other pensions (under Imperial or under State act) to which the dependents of the deceased man are entitled by reason of his death in connection with the war.

Pensions payable to widow, mother, and female dependents will be continued for two years only beyond the date of their marriage or remarriage.

All payments are made fortnightly.

SCHEDULE 45 — *Australia. Pensions to dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.*

[Source: Acts of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of Australia, 1916, p. 131. War Pensions Act, 1914-1916, first schedule.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Daily rate of pay of the member of the forces.	Pension payable to widow on death of member.		Daily rate of pay of the member of the forces.	Pension payable to widow on death of member.	
	Fortnightly.	Annually.		Fortnightly.	Annually.
£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.	£ s. d.
0 6 0 (1.46)	2 0 0 (9.73)	(252.98)	0 17 6 (4.26)	3 10 0 (17.03)	(442.78)
0 7 0 (1.70)	2 3 0 (10.46)	(271.96)	1 2 6 (5.47)	3 17 6 (18.85)	(490.10)
0 9 0 (2.19)	2 9 0 (11.92)	(309.92)	1 10 0 (7.30)	4 9 0 (21.65)	(562.90)
0 10 0 (2.43)	2 12 3 (12.71)	(330.46)	1 17 6 (9.12)	5 0 9 (24.51)	(637.26)
0 10 6 (2.55)	2 13 9 (13.07)	(339.82)	2 5 0 (10.95)	5 12 3 (27.30)	(709.80)
0 11 6 (2.80)	2 16 0 (13.62)	(354.12)	2 10 0 (12.16)	6 0 0 (29.19)	(758.94)
0 12 0 (2.92)	2 17 3 (13.93)	(362.18)	and upward.		
0 13 0 (3.16)	2 19 6 (14.47)	(376.22)			

The widowed mother of an unmarried son receives the same amount as the widow.

To each child pensions are payable at the following rate: First child, 20s. (4.87) a fortnight (126.53 a year); second child, 15s. (3.65) a fortnight (94.90 a year); third and each subsequent child, 10s. (2.43) a fortnight (63.26 a year.)

The maximum rate of payment for a child both of whose parents are dead is as follows: Child up to 10 years of age, 20s. (4.87) per fortnight; child 10 to 14 years of age, 25s. (6.09) per fortnight; child 14 to 16 years of age, 30s. (7.31) per fortnight.

For other dependents of the deceased, pensions may be set by the commissioner of pensions or his deputy; in the aggregate they must not exceed the amount of pension payable to the widow, plus £2 (9.73) per fortnight. No one dependent may receive a sum greater than the widow's pension.

## NEW ZEALAND.

### SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.

For British Army reservists special rates of separation allowance are fixed; these are exclusive of allotted pay,<sup>1</sup> and are approximately the rates fixed for reservists resident in other colonies.

For the New Zealand contingent a flat rate of required allotment for families was fixed in November, 1914. This was 2s. (49 cents) a day. In case of need the deferred pay of the man, 1s. (24 cents) a day, could be added to the allotment.<sup>2</sup> The weekly income of the family would thus be 21s. (\$5.11) per week. No provision for separation allowance was made at the time, and no later information on the point is available.

<sup>1</sup> Required allotments from pay are at the same rate as those fixed for soldiers in Great Britain. See p. 116.

<sup>2</sup> The total pay of a private soldier (lowest rank) is 5s. (\$1.22) a day.

SCHEDULE 46.—*New Zealand. Separation allowances for wives and children of British Army reservists.*

[Data from Regulations for the Issue of Army Separation Allowance, Allotments of Pay and Family Allowance During the Present War, p. 61, and Papers relating to Scales of Pensions and Allowances of Officers and Men of the Oversea Contingents and their Dependents, p. 7.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in shillings and pence. Amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Classes 20 and 19. <sup>1</sup>		Class 17. <sup>1</sup>		Class 16. <sup>1</sup>		Class 15. <sup>1</sup>	
	Allowance payable—		Allowance payable—		Allowance payable—		Allowance payable—	
	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.
Wife.....	s. d. 9 4 (2.27)		s. d. 11 1 (2.70)		s. d. 16 4 (3.97)		s. d. 17 6 (4.26)	
Wife and 1 child.....	14 4 (3.49)		16 1 (3.91)		21 4 (5.19)		22 6 (5.47)	
Wife and 2 children.....	17 10 (4.34)		19 7 (4.76)		24 10 (6.04)		26 0 (6.32)	
Wife and 3 children.....	19 10 (4.82)		21 7 (5.25)		25 10 (6.53)		28 0 (6.81)	
Wife and 4 children.....	21 10 (5.31)		23 7 (5.74)		28 10 (7.01)		30 0 (7.30)	

<sup>1</sup> For classification of rank see p. 119.

Each additional child irrespective of rank of father 2s. (49 cents).  
Each motherless child, 5s. (1.22).

### PENSIONS FOR DISABLED MEN AND FOR THE DEPENDENTS OF MEN DECEASED IN CONSEQUENCE OF WAR.

The same law fixes the amounts and defines the beneficiaries for both disability pension and pensions to dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.

Beneficiaries may be a wife married before the man's death or disablement, or a woman married within 12 months after the date of the man's discharge. In the latter case there must have existed a binding contract to marry before the man left New Zealand, or the woman must have borne a child to the member of the forces, not only before the marriage but before the date of the departure of the man from New Zealand or within 10 months after his departure. The child must have been living at the date of marriage.

Children, including sons, daughters, stepsons, stepdaughters, illegitimate children or children legally adopted before the member joined the forces, are eligible for pension to the age of 16, and at the discretion of the authorities may receive it up to the age of 17. For infirm children the pension may be continued.

A dependent other than wife or child may be a father, mother, stepfather, stepmother, grandfather, grandmother, grandchild, brother, sister, half brother, half sister, or mother-in-law. Except in the case of wife or child, a dependent must have been supported

wholly or partly by the man during the 12 months immediately preceding the member's joining the forces. If wife or children are entitled to pension, other dependents may not receive more than three-fourths of the amount payable to a wife. If there is no wife or child, any other dependent may receive the full amount due to a wife, but not more than the amount of the prewar dependence.

Parents of a deceased member of the forces may be pensioned at any time regardless of prewar dependence, if they are without adequate means of support. The mother can not be less than 50 and the father not less than 55. A widowed mother, solely dependent for support on the deceased member of the forces receives a pension of not less than the pension payable to a wife. In this case the rule setting the maximum for dependents is waived.

In determining pension payable to a member of the forces or to his wife or widow, no account is taken of property or income from other sources. But pensions to other dependents take into consideration property and income from all sources. If any dependent is in receipt of a war allowance from any other source, the pension is proportionately decreased.

Disability pensions date from the termination of appointment or the date of discharge, pensions to dependents of deceased members from the date of death or date reported missing.

Applications for disability pensions must be made within 6 months of the date of the determination of appointment or the discharge; applications by the dependents of a deceased member of the forces must be made within 6 months after the notification of a death. The wife and children may receive a pension payable on report of the death of a member of the forces occurring at any time within 7 years of the receipt of any wound or injury or the commencement of disease.

A widow on remarriage loses her pension, but she may be granted in lump sum or allotments a gratuity equal to 2 years' pension.

Pensions are payable in monthly installments at the post office nearest to the residence of the pensioner.

SCHEDULE 47.—*New Zealand. Classification of ranks for pension purposes.*<sup>1</sup>

Class 1:

Private.  
Bombardier.  
Lance corporal.  
Trooper.  
Gunner.

Class 1—Continued.

Driver.  
Sapper.  
Trumpeter.  
Bugler.  
Able seaman, and equivalent ratings.

<sup>1</sup> For classification of ranks of British Army reservists for separation allowance, see "Great Britain, Classification of rank for separation allowances," p. 119.

## Class 2:

Corporal.

Farrier. Shoeing smith, saddler, or fitter (if bombardier, lance corporal, gunner, or private).

Lance sergeant (not paid as such).

Leading seaman and equivalent ratings.

## Class 3:

Sergeant.

Farrier corporal.

Shoeing smith corporal.

Saddler corporal.

Corporal fitter.

Farrier sergeant.

## Class 3—Continued.

Saddler sergeant.

Armorer sergeant.

Sergeant fitter.

Lance sergeant (paid as such).

Petty officer and equivalent ratings.

## Class 4:

Squadron, battery, or company sergeant major.

Quartermaster sergeant.

Color sergeant.

Staff sergeant.

Pay clerk.

Chief petty officer and equivalent ratings.

## Class 5:

Regimental sergeant major.

Regimental quartermaster sergeant.

Warrant officer and equivalent ranks (Navy).

## Class 6:

Second lieutenant (Army).

Commissioned warrant officer and equivalent ranks.

Sublieutenant and equivalent rank (Navy).

## Class 7:

Captain (Army).

Lieutenant under eight years' seniority, and equivalent ranks (Navy).

## Class 8:

Major (Army).

Lieutenant of eight years' seniority, and equivalent ranks (Navy).

## Class 9:

Lieutenant colonel.

Captain under three years' seniority, and equivalent ranks (Navy).

## Class 10:

Colonel.

Captain of three years' seniority and equivalent ranks (Navy).

Commander and equivalent ranks (Navy).

## Class 11:

Brigadier general.

Major general.

Commodores, first and second class.

Rear admirals and other equivalent ranks.

SCHEDULE 48.—*New Zealand. Pensions for disabled men and their dependents.*<sup>1</sup>

[Data from Statutes of New Zealand, 1915, p. 35 (6 Geo. 5, No. 16), as amended Statutes of New Zealand, 1916, p. 5 (7 Geo. 5, No. 1, sec. 11) (1)].

[Amounts inside of parenthesis are in dollars; amounts outside of parenthesis are in pounds, shillings, and pence.]

Rank of man.	Pension payable to the man.		Pension payable to his wife.		Pension payable for each child.	
	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.	Weekly.	Annually.
Class 1.....	£ <sup>s.</sup> <sub>d.</sub> 1 15 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	£ <sup>s.</sup> <sub>d.</sub> 0 12 6 (3.04)	(158.08)	£ <sup>s.</sup> <sub>d.</sub> 7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 2.....	1 15 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	0 13 0 (3.16)	(164.32)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 3.....	1 15 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	0 13 6 (3.28)	(170.56)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 4.....	1 15 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	0 14 6 (3.53)	(183.56)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 5.....	1 15 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	0 15 0 (3.65)	(189.80)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 6.....	1 17 6 (9.12)	(474.24)	0 17 6 (4.26)	(221.52)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 7.....	2 0 0 (9.73)	(505.96)	1 0 0 (4.87)	(253.24)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 8.....	2 7 0 (11.43)	(594.36)	1 3 6 (5.72)	(297.44)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 9.....	2 16 0 (13.62)	(708.24)	1 8 0 (6.81)	(354.12)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 10.....	2 18 0 (14.11)	(733.72)	1 9 0 (7.05)	(366.60)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)
Class 11.....	3 0 0 (14.59)	(758.68)	1 10 0 (7.30)	(379.60)	7 6 (1.82)	(94.64)

<sup>1</sup> Amounts stated are granted for total disability; for partial disability, the rates are arranged by the War Pension Board subject to the approval of the Minister of Defense.

For a man totally disabled 10s. (\$2.43) a week, in addition to pension, may be paid if the services of an attendant are indispensable and the member has not means to pay for attendant.

If there is no wife, another dependent may receive wife's share up to the extent of prewar dependence.

SCHEDULE 49.—*New Zealand. Pensions for dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.*

[Data from Statutes of New Zealand, 1915, p. 35, 6 Geo. 5, No. 16.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Rank of man.	Amount payable to the wife.		Rank of man.	Amount payable to the wife.	
	Weekly.	Annually.		Weekly.	Annually.
Class 1.....	£ <sup>s.</sup> <sub>d.</sub> 1 5 0 (6.08)	(316.16)	Class 7.....	£ <sup>s.</sup> <sub>d.</sub> 2 5 0 (10.95)	(569.40)
Class 2.....	1 6 0 (6.32)	(328.64)	Class 8.....	2 12 0 (12.65)	(657.80)
Class 3.....	1 7 0 (6.57)	(341.64)	Class 9.....	3 1 0 (14.84)	(771.68)
Class 4.....	1 9 0 (7.05)	(366.60)	Class 10.....	3 3 0 (15.32)	(796.64)
Class 5.....	1 10 0 (7.30)	(379.60)	Class 11.....	3 5 0 (15.81)	(822.12)
Class 6.....	2 0 0 (9.73)	(505.96)			

Each child, irrespective of rank of father, 7s. 6d. (\$1.82) a week.

Motherless children, 10s. (\$2.43) a week.

Mother receives the wife's allowance, if she is a widow and the member was her sole support.

If there was no wife or child, other dependents may receive wife's pension, or the amount of the prewar dependence, whichever is less.

Illegitimate children receive pensions as legitimate children.

### UNION OF SOUTH AFRICA.

The Union of South Africa has made provisions for pensioning disabled men and the dependents of deceased men, but all information available seems to indicate that these provisions are less complete than those of the other colonies of Great Britain. The only available provisions for separation allowances were those made for reservists. The rates, higher than those in Great Britain, are exclusive of allotment of soldier's pay<sup>1</sup> and represent the maximums for all dependents. No information as to required allotments or as to the separation allowances for the South Africa contingent was available.

In 1916 the provisions for pensions for members of the defense force, other than the permanent force, were extended to include all persons enlisted for active service during the present war. There is apparently no graded scale of disability. The maximum pension in case of permanent incapacity, total or partial, is fixed at £100 (\$486.65) annually or 3 years' pay of rank. Civil servants, eligible to disablement pensions as such may receive such pensions in lieu of the military pension if this is more advantageous to them.<sup>2</sup> In case of the death of a member of the force, his widow without regard to rank is entitled to a pension of £70 (\$340.66) a year. This ceases on remarriage. Sons up to the age of 18, daughters up to the age of 21 or until marriage, are eligible for pension, as are also aged or infirm parents or a female relative wholly dependent on the deceased at the time of his death. Issue of pension to children, parents, and female dependents, but not to widows, is at the discretion of the Government.

<sup>1</sup> The required allotment is the same as for soldiers in Great Britain. See p. 116.

<sup>2</sup> Statutes of the Union of South Africa, 1912, p. 274, act No. 13 of 1912, sec. 118, as amended by act No. 29 of 1916 (Statutes of Union of South Africa, 1916, p. 458).

SCHEDULE 50.—*Union of South Africa. Separation allowances to wives and children of British Army reservists.*

[Data from Regulations for the Issue of Separation Allowance, Allotments of Pay and Family Allowance during the Present War, page 60.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in shillings and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Class 20. <sup>1</sup>		Class 19. <sup>1</sup>		Class 17. <sup>1</sup>		Class 16. <sup>1</sup>		Class 15. <sup>1</sup>	
	Allowance pay- able		Allowance pay- able		Allowance pay- able		Allowance pay- able		Allowance pay- able	
	Weekly	Annually.	Weekly	Annually.	Weekly	Annually.	Weekly	Annually.	Weekly	Annually.
Wife.....	s. d. 14 7 (3.55)	(184.60)	s. d. 14 7 (3.55)	(184.60)	s. d. 16 4 (3.97)	(206.44)	s. d. 21 7 (5.25)	(273.00)	s. d. 22 9 (5.53)	(287.56)
Wife and 1 child.....	s. d. 19 10 (4.82)	(250.64)	s. d. 20 5 (4.97)	(258.44)	s. d. 22 2 (5.39)	(280.28)	s. d. 27 5 (6.67)	(346.84)	s. d. 28 7 (6.95)	(361.40)
Wife and 2 children.....	s. d. 25 1 (6.10)	(317.20)	s. d. 26 3 (6.39)	(332.28)	s. d. 28 0 (6.. 81)	(354.12)	s. d. 33 3 (8.09)	(420.68)	s. d. 34 5 (8.37)	(435.24)
Wife and 3 children.....	s. d. 30 4 (7.38)	(383.76)	s. d. 32 1 (7.80)	(405.60)	s. d. 33 10 (8.23)	(427.96)	s. d. 39 1 (9.51)	(494.52)	s. d. 40 3 (9.79)	(509.08)
Wife and 4 children.....	s. d. 35 0 (8.51)	(442.52)	s. d. 36 9 (8.94)	(464.88)	s. d. 38 6 (9.36)	(486.72)	s. d. 43 9 (10.64)	(553.28)	s. d. 44 11 (10.93)	(568.36)

<sup>1</sup> For classification of rank see p. 119.Each subsequent child, irrespective of rank of father, 4s. 8d. (\$1.14) a week.  
Each motherless child, irrespective of rank of father, 5s. 3d. (\$1.28) a week.SCHEDULE 51.—*Union of South Africa. Pensions for dependents of men deceased in consequence of war.*<sup>1</sup>

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in pounds, shillings, and pence; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Amounts payable.	
	Weekly.	Annually.
Widow.....	£ s. d. 1 6 11 $\frac{1}{3}$ (6.55)	£ 70 (340.66)
Each child.....	0 6 1 $\frac{1}{3}$ (1.50)	16 (77.86)
Aged or infirm parents, or female relatives wholly dependent on deceased.....	19 2 $\frac{1}{3}$ (4.68)	50 (243.33)

<sup>1</sup> Statutes of the Union of South Africa, 1912, pp. 276, 290, Act. No. 13 of 1912, sec. 118, and Schedule VI, as amended by statutes of the Union of South Africa, 1916, p. 458, act No. 29 of 1916.

## PRINCIPAL SOURCES OF INFORMATION CONCERNING THE PENSION SYSTEMS OF GREAT BRITAIN AND COLONIES OF GREAT BRITAIN.

Great Britain: Regulations for the issue of army separation allowance, allotments of pay and family allowance during the present war. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1916.

Great Britain: Army Orders, April, 1917. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1917.

Great Britain, Military Service (Civil Liabilities) Committee: Regulations made by the military service (civil liabilities) committee with

the concurrence of the Lord Commissioner of His Majesty's Treasury. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1916. (Cd. 8249.)

Great Britain: The Navy List for April, 1916, corrected to the 18th of March, 1916. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1916.

Great Britain, War Pensions, Etc., Statutory Committee: Draft regulations (pt. 1) for grants to supplement pensions, grants, and separation allowances payable out of public funds and for other grants and allowances, made by the statutory committee of the Royal Patriotic Fund Corporation constituted under the Naval and Military War Pensions, etc., Act, 1915. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1916. (Cd. 8316.)

Papers relating to scales of pensions and allowances of officers and men of the oversea contingents and their dependents. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1915. (Cd. 7793.)

Navy separation allowance. (Extracts from Admiralty Orders.)

Great Britain, Ministry of Pensions: Royal warrant for the pensions of soldiers disabled and of the families and dependents of soldiers deceased in consequence of the present war together with order in council and regulations for pensions of British seamen and marines, their widows, relatives, and dependents. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1917. (House of Commons, 64).

Statutes of New Zealand, 1915 and 1916.

Statutes of the Union of South Africa, 1912 and 1916.

Statutory rules and orders, Commonwealth of Australia, 1917, No. 49.

Acts of the Parliament of the Commonwealth of Australia, 1916.

Royal warrant for the pay, appointment, promotion, and non-effective pay of the Army. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1914.

The draft of a royal warrant for the retired pay of officers disabled and for the pensions of the families and relatives of officers deceased, and for the pensions of nurses disabled in consequence of the present war. London, H. M. Stationery Office, 1917. (Cd. 8631.)

## ITALY.<sup>1</sup>

### SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.

The system of Government separation allowances to the families of soldiers in existence in Italy before 1914 proved insufficient to meet the extraordinary demands of the European conflict. The amounts allowed have been twice raised by the Government since the outbreak of the war, and have been supplemented by various subsidies, both public and private. The last increase in the scale of allowances was made in April of 1917. The present status is shown in the following schedule.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Italian material was prepared by Miss Mary D. Hopkins.

<sup>2</sup> Decree of the lieutenant general, Apr. 23, 1917, No. 662, Gazzetta Ufficiale, Apr. 30, 1917.

SCHEDULE 52.—*Italy. Separation allowances.*

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in lire and fractions of a lira; amounts inside of parentheses are in fractions of a dollar.]

Beneficiaries.	Daily amounts of separation allowances.	
	In capitals of Provinces or districts.	In other communes.
Wife.....	{ 0.80 (0.15)	{ 0.70 (0.14)
Each legitimate or legitimatized child under 12, or older, if incapable of work.....	{ 0.40 (0.08)	{ 0.35 (0.07)
1 parent, 60 years old or incapable of work.....	{ 0.80 (0.15)	{ 0.70 (0.14)
2 parents, satisfying same conditions.....	{ 1.30 (0.25)	{ 1.20 (0.23)
1 brother or sister under 12, or older, if incapable of work.....	{ 0.80 (0.15)	{ 0.70 (0.14)
Every additional brother and sister.....	{ 0.40 (0.08)	{ 0.35 (0.07)

Ascendants and collateral relatives do not receive the allowance if there is a wife or children. In such cases the wife or children or both receive it. When several brothers are called to the colors allowances to parents, brothers, and sisters can be extended in behalf of only one.

All indigent families of soldiers who are deprived of support by the call to arms or retention under arms of their breadwinners may be admitted to the separation allowance.

The allowance must be asked for not by the soldier but by the relatives interested. Such persons will submit their request to the syndic (sindaco) of the commune where they reside, and the syndic on receiving it will make an investigation to ascertain the character and economic condition of the family, so as to make sure that the soldier in question has been actually recalled to the colors or retained in service, and that the family is not already drawing the allowance in another commune. As soon as possible the communal committee is called together to decide upon the merits of the claim. This committee consists of the syndic, as chairman, the local commandant of the Royal Carabiniers, and the president of the local organized charities. If decision must be given on the question of "incapacity for work" the municipal physician must be called in. In the event of the committee's decision being favorable, the syndic is required to provide for the immediate payment of the allowance.<sup>1</sup>

The interest of the authorities in a rapid and effective administration of the system is indicated in many ways. In populous communes, the syndic, to expedite grants, may appoint more than one committee. The commandants of the military districts in a mani-

<sup>1</sup> Circular No. 351, May 20, 1915, Giornale Militare Ufficiale, 1915.

festo of the 22d of May, 1915, say that the reason for direct application of the families to the syndic is "in order to secure the greatest possible speed in the service."

Payment of allowances is made each Monday for the week just past, and every fifteen days the syndic must report to the commandant of the military district the amounts of allowances paid. Funds for the payment of the allowances are obtained by an appropriation in the budget.

In addition to the daily separation allowances described, monthly allowances are paid as a war indemnity to various classes of citizens. Civil employees of the State, for example, may receive 15 lire (\$2.90) or 12 lire (\$2.32) monthly, according as their yearly salaries are not above 1,500 lire (\$289.50) or not above 3,000 lire (\$579), respectively. Subaltern officers, married with at least one child or widowers with two or more children, may receive the 15 lire (\$2.90) a month also.<sup>1</sup>

Besides the State allowances subsidies are granted in especially needy cases from funds subscribed privately and administered by the military authorities. A circular of the Minister of the Marine<sup>2</sup> speaks with appreciation of the large subscriptions for this purpose made by the personnel of the Navy in answer to his previous appeal and emphasizes that individual care should be used in their distribution.

The State has made wide provision for the continuance of salaries to its civil employees recalled to arms and has even, by a decree of May 1, 1916, required that private firms shall, under certain conditions, pay indemnities to their employees amounting, as a maximum, to one-half their salary.<sup>3</sup>

Another source of assistance from the State to the more needy families of soldiers is the compulsory State maternity insurance for wage-earning women working in factories or engaged in other occupations to which the labor law for women and children applies. The benefits amount to 40 lire (\$7.72) at the time of childbirth and are paid to the amount of 70 per cent from the fund created by the contributions of employer and employee, and to the amount of 30 per cent by the State.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Decree of the lieutenant general, Oct. 29, 1916, No. 1499, Gazzetta Ufficiale, Nov. 13, 1916, and Act No. 886, Giornale Ufficiale della Marina, Dec. 31, 1916.

<sup>2</sup> Giornale Ufficiale della Marina, Sept. 30, 1915.

<sup>3</sup> Decree of the lieutenant general, May 1, 1916, No. 490, Gazzetta Ufficiale, May 5, 1916.

<sup>4</sup> Law of July 17, 1910, No. 520, Gazzetta Ufficiale, Aug. 3, 1910.

SCHEDULE 53.—*Italy, Army. Pay of enlisted men in active service, including yearly amounts for pay, rations, and allowances.*

[Official sources, March 10, 1915.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are given in lira; amounts inside of parentheses are given in dollars.]

Rank.	Total yearly pay and allowance in each grade.	Total yearly pay cash for each grade. <sup>1</sup>	Total yearly allowance, food for each grade.	Total yearly allowance, clothing for each grade.	Total yearly allowance, fuel for each grade.	Total yearly allowance, bedding for each grade.
Marshal major.....	2,822.4 (544.72)	2,314.8 (446.75)				
Marshal.....	2,073.6 (400.21)	1,566.0 (302.24)				
Sergeant major.....	1,544.4 (298.07)	1,036.8 (200.10)	396.0 (76.43)			
First sergeant.....	1,184.4 (228.59)	676.8 (130.62)				
Sergeant, trumpeter.....	1,792.8 (346.02)	1,285.2 (248.05)				
Sergeant.....	1,101.6 (212.61)	594.0 (114.64)				
Sapper and trumpeter, lance sergeant.....	511.2 (98.67)	180.0 (34.74)		43.2 (8.34)	54.0 (10.42)	14.4 (2.78)
Lance sergeant.....	493.3 (95.20)	162.0 (31.27)				
Corporal trumpeter, sapper and musician.....	439.2 (84.77)	108.0 (20.84)	219.6 (42.39)			
Corporal, farrier.....	421.2 (81.30)	90.0 (17.37)				
Lance corporal, sapper, trumpeter.....	385.2 (74.35)	54.0 (10.42)				
Private.....	367.3 (70.88)	36.0 (6.95)				

<sup>1</sup> An additional cash allowance is paid when troops are on a war footing, at the rate of 0.75 lira (\$0.15) per day (\$54.75 annually) for sergeants and higher grades, and from 0.20 lira (\$0.04) to 0.35 lira (\$0.07) per day (\$14.60 to \$25.55 annually) for lower grades.

## PENSIONS.

## HISTORY AND GENERAL STATEMENT.

At the beginning of the European War and until the end of 1916 the old Italian pension system remained in force. This was based on the law of February 21, 1895, on civil and military pensions, with its subsequent amendments, and treated wounds and deaths of soldiers as exceptions in a system based primarily on length of service. The law of June 23, 1912, passed at the beginning of the Libyan War, and "valid for all future campaigns of war," by establishing the so-called "privileged" pensions for officers and soldiers on lower salaries raised indeed the amounts of pensions granted to soldiers and families most in need, but changed nothing in the essential structure of the system. This system provided invalid pensions for three categories of infirmities only, gave a flat pension to widows and orphans regardless of the size of the family, and provided support for the ascendants and collateral relatives of the deceased soldier only if the latter had been their sole support.

Under the strain of a war that called into action not merely the professional army but the total forces of the nation, the inadequacy and injustice of a system so archaic and so inelastic became increasingly evident. Public opinion expressing itself in such authoritative ways as in the official conference for all Italy on pensions, at Rome in June of 1916, the writings and lectures of the Hon. Luigi Rava, of

the Italian Parliament, and a critical study of the Italian pension system in comparison with other systems by the Hon. Ivanoe Bonomi, minister of public works, demanded that the pension law be modernized. As a model for this reform, the Government studied the proposed remodeling of the pension system of France, and the changes now in effect in the Italian system show the strong influence of the pending French bill.

The new system was instituted by the decree of the lieutenant general of November 12, 1916. It provided for an increase of pension according to the size of the deceased soldier's family, granting 630 lire (\$121.59) for a widow and two children, or to full orphans up to the number of four, and adding 50 lire (\$9.65) annually for each child under 18, changed the clause of "sole support" to "necessary and chief support," made a broad provision for illegitimate children, and promised, in the regulations to follow, a revision of the categories of disability for invalid pensions on the basis of incapacity for profitable work. These regulations, just received in this country,<sup>1</sup> replace the three former categories of disability by ten, and fix the pensions for these by fractions of the maximum invalid pension for Category I. For Categories IX and X, respectively (the slighter injuries), a temporary allowance and a lump sum are given and for cases where the medical authority is unable to give definite decision on the type of injury, a renewable yearly allowance is given, equal to the pension of the category provisionally fixed. This may be later canceled, in case of the soldier's improvement, or converted into a pension, if his disability is permanent. In case of aggravation of the soldier's disability he may apply for an increase of pension, according to the category of disability to which his new status of disability assigns him.

In contrast to the old conception of grading disability by unfitness for military service, the effort has been made in the new system to grade the injuries and corresponding pensions according to the soldier's loss of earning power in civil life. The disability chart, published with the new regulations of May 20, 1917, is the work, as the minister of the treasury states in his report to the lieutenant general, of a technical commission of experts, medical, legal, and actuarial, and shows the replacement of the rough and ready classification of infirmities in the old three categories by a carefully detailed scale of injuries, graded with the utmost possible scientific precision and accuracy. Traces are also evident of the purpose to compensate disfigurement, even when it involves no actual disability.

<sup>1</sup> Decree of the lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, Gazzetta Ufficiale, June 7, 1917.

## RETIREMENT PENSIONS.

Retirement pensions for officers of the Army and Navy are liquidated on the basis of their average salary for the last five years, if they themselves ask for retirement, or for the last three years if retired by law or official order. For captains and subaltern officers 300 lire (\$57.90) are added to the quinquennial or triennial average.

If the average is not above 4,000 lire (\$772) it is increased by one-fifth if the officer has not received an increase of salary for the last 12 years or has received an increase which does not amount to one-fifth of the average. In this latter case no account is taken of the increase of the last 12 years.

Taking the average as the base, the pension is computed according to the fractions given in the official tables for Army and Navy. (See Schedule 55, p. 157.) The average is not above 2,000 lire (\$386), the pension equals the given fraction of 2,000 multiplied by the number of years of service. If the average is above 2,000, the pension equals the given fraction of 2,000 times the number of years of service plus the given fraction of any remaining sum times the number of years of service. The pension must not be less than 150 lire (\$28.95) or more than 8,000 lire (\$1,544) and must not exceed four-fifths of the average as calculated above.

Superior officers have a right to retirement pension after 30 years' service, inferior officers (subalterns) after 25 years' service. They must, however, have reached the following ages: Generals and admirals, lieutenant generals and vice admirals, and corresponding grades, 55 years; major generals, rear admirals, and corresponding grades, 55 years; superior officers, 52 years; inferior officers, 45 years.

Enlisted men have a right to retirement pensions after 20 years' service and at 42 years of age. For the marines, however, this age is reduced to 39 years if they have had 15 years' service with the fleet.

The minimum and maximum retirement pensions are paid to enlisted men according to the amounts fixed by grade on the official schedule. (See Schedule 57, footnote 1, p. 163.)

SCHEDULE 54.—*Italy, Army. Retirement pensions for officers.*

[Sources: *Les Armées des Principales Puissances au Printemps de 1913*, Paris, 1913, p. 279; *Veltzé's Internationaler Armee Almanach, 1913-14*.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Salary.	Annual pension.	
		Minimum. <sup>1</sup>	Maximum.
Lieutenant general.....	12,000 (2,316.00)	5,833 (1,125.77)	8,000 (1,544.00)
Major general.....	10,000 (1,930.00)	4,833 (932.77)	8,000 (1,544.00)
Colonel.....	8,000 (1,544.00)	3,833 (739.77)	6,100 (1,177.30)
Lieutenant colonel:			
After 5 years grade.....	7,000 (1,351.00)	3,942 (700.81)	5,600 (1,080.80)
Less than 5 years.....	6,000 (1,158.00)	3,406 (657.30)	4,800 (925.40)
Major:			
After 5 years grade.....	5,500 (1,061.50)	3,540 (683.22)	4,400 (849.20)
Less than 5 years.....	5,000 (965.00)	3,060 (590.55)	4,000 (772.00)
Captain:			
After 10 years grade or 25 years service.....	4,800 (926.40)	2,931 (565.68)	4,000 (772.00)
After 5 years.....	4,400 (849.20)	2,731 (527.08)	3,700 (725.8)
Less than 5 years.....	4,000 (772.00)	2,131 (411.28)	3,440 (663.92)
Lieutenant:			
After 15 years grade.....	3,600 (694.80)	2,431 (469.18)	3,120 (602.16)
After 10 years grade or 15 years service.....	3,400 (656.20)	2,181 (420.93)	3,040 (586.72)
After 5 years.....	2,800 (540.40)	1,931 (372.68)	2,480 (478.64)
Less than 5 years.....	2,400 (463.20)	1,731 (334.08)	2,100 (416.88)
Sublieutenant.....	2,000 (386.00)	1,617 (312.08)	1,840 (355.12)

<sup>1</sup> Superior officers, after 30 years' service; inferior officers, after 25 years' service.

SCHEDULE 55.—*Italy. Fractions to be used in reckoning pensions for officers.*

## A. NAVY.

[Source: Law of June 27, 1909, No. 375.]

Grade.	General staff.		N a v a l constructors, medical and com missary corps.	
	On first 2,000 lire.	On any remaining sum.	On first 2,000 lire.	On any remaining sum.
Midshipman and sublieutenant.....	1/30	1/46	1/36	1/54
Sublieutenant of warship and lieutenant.....	1/30	1/45	1/35	1/53
Lieutenant of warship and captain.....	1/27	1/41	1/32	1/49
Captain of corvette and major.....	1/32	1/49	1/34	1/52
Captain of frigate and colonel.....	1/34	1/51	1/35	1/52
Captain of warship and colonel.....	1/37	1/55	.....	.....

## B. ARMY.

[Source: Law of July 14, 1907, No. 482.]

Grade.	General staff, infantry, cavalry, artillery, constructors, permanent personnel of districts, personnel of fortresses.		Medical corps, commissary, accountants, veterinary, pharmacists.		Royal carbineers.	
	On first 2,000 lire.	On any remaining sum.	On first 2,000 lire.	On any remaining sum.	On first 2,000 lire.	On any remaining sum.
Sublieutenant.....	1/34	1/51	1/36	1/55	1/36	1/55
Lieutenant.....	1/33	1/50	1/35	1/53	1/35	1/53
Captain.....	1/33	1/50	1/36	1/55	1/35	1/52
Major.....	1/35	1/52	1/38	1/57	1/37	1/55
Lieutenant colonel.....	1/37	1/56	1/38	1/57	1/37	1/55
Pharmacist, first class.....	1/37	1/56	1/37	1/56	1/37	1/55
Pharmacist, chief, second class.....	1/37	1/56	1/37	1/55	1/37	1/55
Pharmacist, chief, first class.....	1/37	1/56	1/35	1/53	1/37	1/55
Chemical-pharmaceutical director.....	1/37	1/56	1/35	1/53	1/37	1/55
Chemical-pharmaceutical inspector.....	1/37	1/56	1/35	1/53	1/37	1/55

## DISABILITY PENSIONS.

Disability pensions for officers for injuries incurred in service, according to Category I of the old law, are equal to four-fifths of the officer's salary increased by one-half; and for soldiers they are equal to the maximum retirement pensions given on the official table increased by two-thirds. (See Schedules 56 and 57, pp. 160 to 163.)

For the "privileged" pensions granted for injuries incurred in war to officers and soldiers who have claim to disability pensions not exceeding 3,000 lire (\$579), one-fifth is added to the amounts computed as above. These privileged pensions may not exceed 3,000 lire (\$579).

The new pension regulations of May 20, 1917, remodel the system of invalid pensions as follows: Ten categories of disability take the place of the previous three, ranging from blindness and loss of all the limbs to the lightest grades of injury. The maximum pension, that of Category I for total disability (100 per cent loss of earning power) is retained from the old system. It is notable that the pensions of this category are larger in amount than the corresponding ones granted by any other continental nation among the belligerents. The pensions of Categories II to VIII inclusive are equal to 80, 75, 70, 60, 50, 40, and 30 per cent of the pension of Category I, respectively. Privileged pensions are paid to officers whose normal pension amounts to less than 3,000 lire (\$579) and are reckoned by adding one-fifth to the amounts computed as above. Privileged pensions for noncommissioned officers and enlisted men are fixed by the official table attached to the decree of May 20, 1917. (See Schedule 57, footnote 1, p. 163.) For the injuries of Category IX a temporary allowance is paid, equal to the pension of Category VIII, during from three to six years, provided that the soldier or officer has not the right to the retirement pension. For injuries of Category X, provided again that the injured man has not the right to the retirement pension, an indemnity is paid in a lump sum varying from six months' payment of the pension for Category VIII to two years' payments, but a claim for this indemnity involves renunciation of the claim to a pension. When the military medical authority can not decide the question of the seriousness of the injury or of its permanence, a renewable allowance is paid, equal to the pension of the category provisionally fixed, for from one year to five years according to the time fixed for the next medical consultation. If at the end of this period the injury is recognized as permanent, the renewable allowance is changed to a pension, or, if doubt still exists, the allowance may be further prolonged, but not for more than eight years including the first period. At the end of this time a definite medical decision must be given, according to which the allowance must either be converted into a pension, or into the temporary allowance or lump sum payment spoken of

above, or otherwise must be cancelled. In case of aggravation of infirmity, a soldier may apply for increase of pension.<sup>1</sup>

A noteworthy innovation in the law is the increased provision for the most serious types of injury. If a soldier's disability indispensably requires the assistance of another person, he has the right to a supplementary allowance as well as to the pension due him. This allowance amounts to 150 lire (\$28.95) annually and may in the most serious cases be doubled. The privileged pension, moreover, is subject to increase for length of service. An officer after five years of service, or a soldier after eight years of service, receives for every year of active service or campaign one-twentieth of the difference between the minimum retirement pension and the privileged pension, provided the privileged pension does not exceed the amount of the minimum retirement pension. If, on the other hand, the officer or soldier has served the 20 years required for a retirement pension, he receives as the privileged pension the amount of the retirement pension plus one-tenth, if this results more favorably than the pension computed in percentage of the disability pension of Category I.

---

<sup>1</sup> Decree of the lieutenant general, May 1, 1916, No. 497, 4 Gazzetta Officiale, May 6, 1916.

SCHEDULE 56.—*Italy. Disability pensions to officers for injuries incurred in war.*

[Based on law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70, codified text (Codic. e Leggi Usu. all'Italia), Vol. II, no. 2393, ff., Milan, Hoepli, 1905; law of June 23, 1912, No. 667 (Gazz. Uff., July 5, 1912); decree of the lieutenant general, Nov. 12, 1916, No. 1598 (Gazz. Uff., Nov. 28, 1916); decree of the lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876 (Gazz. Uff., June 7, 1917).]

[Amounts given outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts given inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Army.	Navy.	Pensions (annual amounts) for the categories of disability <sup>1</sup> indicated below: <sup>2</sup>												Ten- per- cent pay- ment, <sup>3</sup> Lump-sum pay- ment, <sup>3</sup>
			Salary.	100 per cent in- validity. I. <sup>4</sup>	80 per cent of I. II.	75 per cent of I. III.	70 per cent of I. IV.	60 per cent of I. V.	50 per cent of I. VI.	40 per cent of I. VII.	30 per cent of I. VIII.	20 per cent of I. IX.	10 per cent of I. X.		
Lieutenant general...	Vice admiral...	12,000 (2,316)	8,000 (1,344)	8,000 (1,344)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (416.88)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Major general....	Rear admiral...	10,000 (1,930)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	5,760 (1,389.60)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (416.88)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Colonel.....	Captain of warship...	8,000 (1,544)	8,000 (1,544)	7,340 (1,513.12)	7,350 (1,418.55)	6,800 (1,323.98)	6,800 (1,323.98)	6,800 (1,323.98)	6,800 (1,323.98)	6,800 (1,323.98)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (416.88)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Lieutenant colonel:	Captain of frigate:	7,000 (1,351)	8,000 (1,351)	6,720 (1,216.96)	6,300 (1,216.96)	5,880 (1,216.96)	5,880 (1,216.96)	5,880 (1,216.96)	5,880 (1,216.96)	5,880 (1,216.96)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
After 5 years....	Less than 5 years.	6,000 (1,158)	7,200 (1,389.60)	5,760 (1,111.68)	5,400 (1,042.20)	5,040 (972.72)	5,040 (972.72)	5,040 (972.72)	5,040 (972.72)	5,040 (972.72)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Major:	Captain of corvette:	5,500 (1,061.50)	6,600 (1,273.80)	5,280 (1,019.04)	4,950 (955.35)	4,620 (891.60)	3,960 (764.28)	3,960 (764.28)	3,960 (764.28)	3,960 (764.28)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
After 5 years....	Less than 5 years.	5,000 (965)	6,000 (1,158)	4,800 (926.40)	4,500 (868.50)	4,200 (810.60)	3,600 (694.80)	3,600 (694.80)	3,600 (694.80)	3,600 (694.80)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Captain:	Lieutenant of warship:	4,800 (926.40)	6,120 (1,181.16)	4,896 (941.93)	4,590 (883.87)	4,284 (826.81)	3,672 (708.70)	3,672 (708.70)	3,672 (708.70)	3,672 (708.70)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
After 10 years...	After 10 years of 25 years' service.	4,400 (849.20)	5,640 (1,088.52)	4,512 (870.82)	4,230 (816.39)	3,948 (761.96)	3,384 (653.11)	3,384 (653.11)	3,384 (653.11)	3,384 (653.11)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
After 5 years....	Less than 5 years.	4,000 (772.00)	5,160 (995.88)	4,128 (796.70)	3,870 (746.91)	3,612 (697.12)	3,096 (597.53)	3,096 (597.53)	3,096 (597.53)	3,096 (597.53)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
Lieutenant:	Sublieutenant of warship:	3,600 (694.80)	4,080 (903.24)	3,744 (722.59)	3,510 (677.43)	3,276 (632.27)	3,000 (579)	2,808 (541.94)	2,808 (541.94)	2,808 (541.94)	5,760 (1,111.68)	4,320 (833.76)	4,320 (833.76)	2,460-8,640 (1,667.52)	
After 15 years' grade.														1,685 (325.21)	

After 10 years grade or 25 years service.	After 10 years...	3,400 (654,20)	4,440 (856,92)	3,552 (685,54)	3,330 (642,69)	3,108 (593,94)	3,000 (579)	2,664 (514,15)	2,131 (411,28)	1,598 (308,41)	1,588 (308,41)
After 5 years.....	After 5 years.....	2,800 (540,40)	3,720 (717,96)	3,000 (579)	3,000 (579)	2,678 (516,55)	2,232 (430,78)	1,786 (344,70)	1,339 (258,43)	668 (126,21)	5,2,678 (-516,85)
Less than 5 years.....	Less than 5 years.....	2,400 (463,20)	3,240 (623,32)	3,000 (579)	2,916 (562,79)	2,721,6 (525,27)	2,333 (450,27)	1,944 (375,19)	1,555 (300,12)	1,166 (225,04)	588,2,332 (-50,08)
Sublieutenant.....	Midshipman.....	2,000 (386,00)	3,000 (579)	2,880 (521,10)	2,700 (486,36)	2,160 (416,88)	1,800 (347,40)	1,440 (277,92)	1,080 (298,44)	1,080 (298,44)	540,2,160 (-416,88)

<sup>1</sup> Decree of lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876; Art. 8. When the military medical authority can not give definite decision on the seriousness of the infirmity, the officer shall be relieved, and the Court of Account shall pay him a renewable allowance equal to the "privileged" pension due him on the basis of the category of injury provisionally fixed, provided that the infirmity falls within the first eight categories. The duration of the allowance shall not be less than a year or longer than 5 years. Art. 9. If, at the end of this period the disability is recognized to be permanent, the renewable allowance is converted into a pension; otherwise it shall be extended for another period, which, together with the first, shall not exceed 8 years, to the amount of the pension for the new grade of disability fixed. At the end of the second period a definite decision must be given by the medical authority on the basis of which the renewable allowance shall be converted into a pension or into the allowance for Category VIII or Category IX, if the disability is recognized as permanent; otherwise it shall be canceled.

<sup>2</sup> Pensions of Category I are computed according to the law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70 (codified text). No pension may exceed 8,000 lire. Subaltern officers have 300 lire added to salary as base of computation.

Decree of lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, Art. 3: Pensions of Categories II to VIII range from 80 per cent to 30 per cent of pension for Category I, as indicated, but these are computed on the theoretical maximum pension as base, not the pension as limited by law to 8,000 lire. The resulting pension must not, of course, exceed 8,000 lire.

Law of June 23, 1912, No. 667, Art. 2: "Privileged" pensions are computed by adding one-fifth to the pension of Category I. They are granted only to officers having claim to a pension of less than 3,000 lire annually, and may not in any case exceed 3,000 lire.

Decree of lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, Art. 4: For officers who have not served the length of time required for retirement, but have served not less than 5 years, the "privileged" pension shall be increased for every year of active service or campaign of war by one-twentieth of the difference between the minimum retirement pension and the "privileged" pension. The pension thus increased, however, may not exceed the amount of the minimum retirement pension.

If, however, the officer has served the length of time required for retirement, the "privileged" pension shall be paid to the amount of the retirement pension increased by one-tenth when this amount is more favorable than that fixed by the table.

The amount of the retirement pension shall be fixed for the purpose of these calculations by taking as the base for liquidation the officer's last salary. The amount of the retirement pension shall be the same as that fixed for the purpose of Categories I, Nos. 1-8, inclusive (Schedule of Categories of disabilities p. 175), or other injuries of Category I.

<sup>3</sup> Art. 5. The officer who in war service has suffered any of the injuries listed in Category I, Nos. 1-8, indispensable (Schedule of Categories of disabilities p. 175), or other injuries of Category I, if the medical authority has certified that the assistance of another person is indispensable, has the right, besides the pension, to a supplementary allowance, not transferable. This allowance shall be 150 lire (\$28.94) annually, and shall be doubled in the case of Category I, No. 1, or where more than one of the injuries indicated above coexist.

This allowance may be revoked, if in the judgment of the National Institute (Opera Nazionale) for the Protection and Assistance of War Invalids (law of Mar. 25, 1917, No. 481) the reason for the grant is decreased, because the pensioned man has been provided for by a public institution, or when it appears that he has refused to enter such an institution.

<sup>4</sup> Art. 6. Temporary allowance granted only if officer has not the right to the retirement pension.

<sup>5</sup> Art. 7. Lump-sum payment granted only if officer has not the right to the retirement pension.

The sum varies from 6 months' payment of the 8th category pension to a maximum of 2 years' payments of same. Request for this grant implies renunciation of claim to a

**SCHEDULE 57.—Italy.** “Privileged” pensions to noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men disabled in war.<sup>12</sup>

[Source: Official table attached to the decree of the Lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, confirming the regulations for the execution of Art. 22 of the decree of Nov. 12, 1916, No. 1558, on "privileged" war pensions (Tzauz. Uff. June 7, 1917), with additions according to the text of the decree.]

[Amounts given outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts given inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Amounts granted for disability <sup>2</sup> incurred in war.									
Pension (annual) for Categories <sup>3</sup> —									
Army.	Navy.	I. 100 per cent.	II. 80 per cent.	III. 75 per cent.	IV. 70 per cent.	V. 60 per cent.	VI. 50 per cent.	VII. 40 per cent.	VIII. 30 per cent.
1. Ald., marshal, and master at arms.	Boutswain of first and second class and others of equivalent grade.	3,000 (679)	2,419 (466,87)	2,268 (437,72)	2,116 (408,39)	1,814 (350,10)	1,512 (291,82)	1,200 (233,31)	907 (175,05)
2. Quartermaster major, quartermaster, sergeant major, brigadier of Royal engineers, sergeant major, vice brigadier of Royal engineers, corporal, and corporal of Royal engineers.	Second boatswain and others of equivalent grade.	2,240 (452,32)	1,792 (345,86)	1,680 (324,21)	1,568 (302,62)	1,344 (259,39)	1,120 (216,16)	896 (172,93)	672 (129,70)
3. Corporal, private, and student carpenter.	Subboatswain and others of equivalent grade.	1,080 (324,24)	1,314 (259,39)	1,200 (243,18)	1,176 (226,97)	1,008 (194,51)	840 (102,12)	672 (129,70)	504 (97,27)
4. Candidate, private, and student carpenter.	Selected seaman, b. and common seaman of first and second class of other categories.	1,260 (243,18)	1,008 (191,54)	945 (182,39)	882 (170,23)	756 (145,91)	630 (121,59)	504 (97,27)	378 (72,95)
5. Ship boy, common seaman of third class of other categories.	Ship boy, common seaman of third class of other categories.	1,066 (205,74)	852 (161,44)	790 (161,21)	746 (143,98)	639 (123,35)	533 (102,87)	426 (82,22)	310 (61,57)

<sup>1</sup> The maximum "privileged" war pension (Category I) is computed by adding 1/5 to the disability pension, Category I, peace basis, which equals the maximum retirement pension plus 2/3. (Law of June 23, 1912, no. 617, Art. 2, Gazz. Uff. July 5, 1912; and law of Feb. 21, 1895, no. 70, Art. 100, Codice o Leggi Usuali d'Italia, Vol. II, p. 2693, Milan, Hoepli, 1905.)

"Privileged" pensions are granted only to soldiers who have claim to a disability pension of less than L.3,000 (\$679), and can not in any case exceed L.3,000.

Maximum and minimum retirement pensions serving as basis for reckoning disability pensions in peace and "privileged" pensions for war are shown in the table below, which gives retired pensions for the Navy as confirmed by the Law of July 2, 1911, no. 621 (Gazz. Uff. July 4, 1911). As shown by the Table of Equivalents, these apply to the Army grades of the main table as well.

Retirement pension.			
Grade.	Minimum, 20 years' active service.	Maximum, 32 years' active service.	Disability pension for Category I, peace basis.
a.....	1,080 (208.44)	36 (6.96)	1,512 (291.82)
b.....	700 (146.68)	30 (5.79)	1,120 (216.16)
c.....	600 (115.80)	20 (3.86)	840 (162.12)
d.....	510 (98.43)	10 (1.93)	630 (121.59)
e.....	425 (82.03)	9 (1.74)	533 (102.87)

<sup>2</sup> Families of soldiers permanently disabled in war receive (in addition to the soldier's disability pension) the same allowances as the families of soldiers called to or retained with the colors; these amounts are given on p. 152. (Law of Mar. 25, 1917, no. 481, Gazz. Uff. Apr. 2, 1917.)

<sup>3</sup> When the military medical authority can not give a definite decision on the seriousness of the infirmity, the soldier shall be retired and the court of accounts shall pay him a *renewable allowance* equal to the "privileged" pension due him on the basis of the category of injury provisionally fixed, provided that the injury falls within the first

eight categories. The duration of the allowance shall not be less than a year or longer than 5.

If at the end of this period, the disability is recognized to be permanent, the *renewable allowance* is converted into a pension; otherwise it shall be extended for another period, which together with the first shall not exceed 8 years, to the amount of the pension for the new grade of disability fixed. At the end of the second period, a definite decision must be given by the medical authority on the basis of which the renewable allowance shall be converted into a pension or into the allowance for Category VIII or Category IX, if the disability is recognized as permanent; otherwise it shall be canceled.

<sup>4</sup> The soldier who in war service has suffered any of the injuries listed in Category I, Nos. 1-8, inclusive (Schedule of Categories of Disability, p. 153), or other injuries of Category I, if the medical authority has certified that the assistance of another person is indispensable, has the right to besides the pension to a supplementary allowance, not transferable. This allowance shall be 150 lire (\$28.95) annually and shall be doubled in the case indicated in Category I, No. 1, or where more than one of the injuries indicated above coexist. This allowance may be revoked if in the judgment of the National Institute (Opera Nazionale) for the Protection and Assistance of War Invalids (Law of Mar. 25, 1917, no. 481, Gazz. Uff. Apr. 2, 1917), the reason for the grant is decreased because the pensioned man has been provided for by a public institution, or when it appears that he has refused to enter such an institution.

<sup>5</sup> Granted only if the soldier has not the right to the retirement pension. Duration of the allowance (3 to 6 years) shall be determined by the military medical authority on the basis of degree of incapacity for profitable work.

<sup>6</sup> Granted only if soldier has not the right to the retirement pension. The sum varies from 6 months' payment of the eighth category pension to a maximum of 2 years' payments of same. Request for this grant implies renunciation of claim to a pension except in case of aggravation of the infirmity in question.

<sup>7</sup> For soldiers who have not served the length of time required for retirement, but have served not less than 8 years, the "privileged" pension shall be increased for every year of active service or campaign of war by 1/20 of the difference between the minimum retirement pension and the "privileged" pension. The pension in order to be thus increased, however, may not exceed the amount of the minimum retirement pension. Practically this applies only to disabilities of less than 40 per cent severity. If, however, the soldier has served the length of time required for retirement, the "privileged" pension shall be paid to the amount of the retirement pension increased by 1/10 if this amount is more favorable than that fixed by the schedule. The amount of the retirement pension shall be fixed for the purpose of this calculation by taking as the base for liquidation the soldier's last pay.

In all belligerent countries it has been found necessary in various ways to supplement the existing provisions of the pension laws. Even in countries with a revised pension system such as Italy's, supplementary legislation has been found necessary. A modern type of provision supplementary to the disability pension is shown in the legislation extending the payment of the separation allowance to the families of soldiers permanently disabled in war. This has been done in Italy by the law establishing the National Institute for War Invalids (Opera Nazionale).<sup>1</sup>

The allowance is extended without limitation on the same terms as to the families of soldiers called to or retained with the colors.

The National Institute coordinates and centralizes the work of the previously existing relief agencies for the assistance of wounded soldiers, acting through and with them apparently as a sort of central clearing house. It is supported by public appropriations and by private contributions.

The law makes elaborate provision for the care and reeducation of wounded soldiers and provides payment of allowances to them during treatment and training. Whatever the degree of earning power reestablished by the treatment, the pension provisions remain unchanged. A soldier is, however, penalized for refusing treatment by loss of part or all of his pension.

#### PENSIONS TO WIDOWS AND OTHER DEPENDENTS.

The remodeled and modernized regulations for dependents' pensions were established by the decree of the lieutenant general of November 12, 1916. These were not changed by the regulations of May 20, 1917.

Dependents of officers dying of injuries or disease incurred in service receive one-half of the officer's pension in case this does not exceed 3,000 lire (\$579) and otherwise 40 per cent of the officer's salary. Dependents of soldiers (noncommissioned officers and enlisted men) receive under the same circumstances one-half the maximum pension of Category I. These general rules are subject to such changes and exceptions as will be noted.

Dependents having a right to the pension are widows, children under 18 years of age (including illegitimate children under certain conditions), or parents, or orphan brothers and sisters under 18 years of age. According to the regulations the widow alone, the widow and one child, or the widow and two children receive the same amount. For each ad-

<sup>1</sup> Law of Mar. 25, 1917, No. 481, Gazzetta Ufficiale, Apr. 2, 1917.

ditional child under 18 years of age there is an annual increase of 50 lire (\$9.65). If there is no widow, the orphans receive the full pension, the amount increasing 50 lire (\$9.65) annually for each orphan under 18 years of age beyond the number of four.

If the widow for any reason lives apart from any or all of the children, the pension is divided, one-half going to the widow and the other half being divided equally among all the children who have the right to it, except that in case there is only one child he receives one-fourth. In case of the division between the widow and children the 50 lire (\$9.65) increase goes wholly to the children.

If the widow is unable to obtain the pension because her marriage during the soldier's term of service was not authorized according to the requirements of the military authorities, the legitimate children receive it; provided the marriage was contracted before the time of the wounds or disease leading to the father's death—or the legitimated children if born before the same time.

Provision for illegitimate children legally recognized is made under the following conditions: In absence of others having claim to the pension, illegitimate children may receive the full amount; in presence of the widow or of legitimate or legitimated children of the soldier, they are considered as orphans of a previous marriage and receive the same share in the allowance as any other child. In case, however, of the division of the pension spoken of above, the share of each is decreased one-fifth, this amount being added to the share of the other participants, whose normal share is decreased by the presence of the illegitimates. When parents or brothers or unmarried sisters under age have a competitive claim to the pension the pension is divided in halves between them and the illegitimates. To acquire the right to a pension, illegitimate children must have been acknowledged by the soldier 90 days before the conclusion of peace.

In absence of widow or orphans, ascendants and collateral relatives have a claim to the full pension if the soldier has been their necessary and chief support. The father receives the pension if he is a widower, or blind, or 50 years old, or incapable of wage earning; and also if, even after the soldier's death, he becomes destitute through no fault of his own within a period of five years. The mother under the same conditions may receive it, even if she becomes a widow within a period of five years after the soldier's death. If she lived separated from her husband by no fault of her own and received no support from him, she may receive the full amount of the pension, provided her other circumstances entitle her to it. If the father, however, has also the legal requirements for the pension, it will be divided equally between them. In case of her remarriage the mother ceases to receive the pension.

Even the mother of an illegitimate son, if unmarried and satisfying the other condition of dependence, may receive in the event of the son's death the full amount of the pension. For the purpose of the pension, however, she must legally have recognized the son before November 12, 1916. In case the father, through a penal sentence, has suffered loss or suspension of the pension, the mother receives two-thirds of the amount.

Orphan brothers and unmarried sisters in the absence of other claimants, if under 18 and dependent on the soldier, may also receive the full amount of the pension.

The family of a soldier dying in captivity from injuries incurred in service receive the full pension; if cause of service is unproved, two-thirds of the pension, unless their right to it is disproved, or unless, in the judgment of the Court of Accounts, the ordinary allowance is more favorable. The family of a soldier declared missing in the absence of news from him for four months is granted a pension to the same amount and by the same rules as the family of a soldier dying in captivity.

The decree of the lieutenant general of March 15, 1917,<sup>1</sup> provides a food allowance for indigent parents of a soldier dead or missing.

By far the largest dependent's pension granted is given to the widow and children of any Italian executed for political reasons during the war at the hands of the Austro-Hungarian Government. The widow receives 1,800 lire (\$347.40), and each child up to 21 years of age 600 lire (\$115.80). The law establishing this pension is of special interest as having first introduced into the Italian legislation the principle of the sliding scale of pensions in accordance with the size of the family, which was later confirmed and incorporated in the new pension laws.

In case of her remarriage, the widow forfeits her pension but receives a lump sum equal to four yearly payments of the pension, if she is not above 35 years of age and if there are no orphans. She may otherwise, if she is not above 50 years of age, receive a lump sum equal to three yearly payments.

Pensions to all children cease as they become of age and pensions to daughters at their marriage.

The annual increase of 50 lire (\$9.65) for each child beyond two or each full orphan beyond four is reduced or ceases as the number of persons entitled is reduced by the children's coming of age, by marriage (in the case of a girl), by death, etc.

When it is learned after payment of a pension to parents that these parents have other sources of income which enable them to provide

<sup>1</sup> Giornale Militare Ufficiale, No. 261, Apr. 13, 1917.

at least in part for their own support, the pension is reduced by one-third, one-half, or two-thirds, or canceled, according to the amount of the ascertained income. In like manner if the parents from a state of indigence come into circumstances which would not justify the claim to a pension, the pension is reduced as above or revoked. The same conditions of reduction or forfeiture apply to orphan brothers and sisters.

SCHEDULE 58.—*Italy. Pensions to widows and other dependents of officers killed*

[Based on law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70, codified text (Codici e Leggi Usuali d'Italia, Vol. II, pp. 2693, ff. general, Sept. 7, 1916, No. 1185 (Gazz. Uff. Sept. 22, 1916); decree of the lieutenant general, Nov. 12, 1916, June 7, 1917).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Stipulations.	Deceased.		
		Lieutenant general.	Major general.	Colonel.
		Vice admiral.	Rear admiral.	Captain of warship.
Widow and orphans:				
Widow <sup>1</sup> .....	Pensionable salary.....	12,000 (2,316)	10,000 (1,930)	8,000 (1,544)
Widow and one child.....	If marriage was authorized according to the requirements of the military authorities. <sup>2</sup>	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
Widow and two children.....		4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
Each additional child. <sup>3</sup>	If under 18 years of age.....	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)
Full orphans to number of four.	If under 18 years of age and (in case of daughters) unmarried.	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
Each additional orphan. <sup>3</sup>		50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)
Illegitimate children.....	If legally recognized: <sup>5</sup>			
	a. In absence of others having claim.....	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
	b. In competition with parents or brothers or unmarried sisters under age. <sup>6</sup>	2,000 (386.00)	2,000 (386.00)	1,600 (303.80)

<sup>1</sup> On remarriage widow forfeits pension but receives a lump sum equal to four yearly payments of pension if she is not above 35 and there are no orphans. Otherwise widow may receive lump sum equal to three yearly payments if she is not above 50 years of age.

<sup>2</sup> If widow is unable to obtain pension because her marriage was not authorized as required by the military authorities (a), the legitimate children receive pension if marriage was contracted before time of wounds or disease leading to father's death, (b) the legitimated children born before said time.

<sup>3</sup> The increase ceases or is reduced by degrees to nothing as the number of children on the base of which pension is liquidated is reduced by children's reaching 18, marriage, death, etc.

<sup>4</sup> Law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70 (codified text), art. 106. When the widow for any reason lives apart from any or all of the children of her own or of a former marriage of the soldier, she receives one-half the indemnity

*in war, dying of injuries incurred in service, dying in captivity, or missing.*

Milan, Hoepli, 1905); law of June 23, 1912, No. 667 (Gazz. Uff. July 5, 1912); decree of the lieutenant No. 1598 (Gazz. Uff. Nov. 28, 1916); decree of the lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876 (Gazz. Uff.

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Deceased—Continued.

Lieutenant colonel.		Major.		Captain.			Lieutenant.				Sub-lieutenant.
After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 10 years in grade or 25 years' service.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 15 years in grade.	After 10 years in grade or 25 years' service.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	
Captain of frigate.		Captain of corvette.		Lieutenant of warship.			Sublieutenant of warship.				Midshipman.
After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 10 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 15 years.	After 10 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	
7,000 (1,351)	6,000 (1,158)	5,500 (1,060.50)	5,000 (965.00)	4,800 (926.40)	4,400 (849.20)	4,000 (772.00)	3,600 (694.80)	3,400 (656.20)	2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,000 (386.00)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (424.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (301.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (424.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (301.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (424.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (301.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (424.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (301.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)	50 (9.65)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (424.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (301.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
1,400 (270.20)	1,200 (231.60)	1,100 (212.30)	1,000 (193.00)	1,020 (196.86)	940 (308.80)	860 (165.98)	780 (150.54)	740 (142.82)	620 (119.66)	540 (104.22)	750 (144.75)

or the widow's pension. The other half shall be divided in equal parts among all the children of the dead soldier who are entitled to it. If there is but one child that child receives one-fourth of the indemnity or the widow's pension.

<sup>6</sup> To acquire right to pension illegitimate children must have been acknowledged by the officer not later than 90 days before the conclusion of peace.

<sup>6</sup> In competition with the widow or with the legitimate or legitimated children of the deceased, illegitimate children are considered as orphans of a previous marriage. In case of the division of the pension (see footnote 4) the share of each one of the illegitimate is reduced by one-fifth, this amount going to increase the shares of the other participants.

SCHEDULE 58.—*Italy. Pensions to widows and other dependents of officers killed in*

Beneficiaries.	Stipulations.	Deceased.		
		Lieutenant general.	Major general.	Colonel.
		Vice admiral.	Rear admiral.	Captain of warship.
In absence of widow or orphans:				
Father <sup>1</sup> .....	If widowed, blind, 50 years old, or incapable of profitable work, or within 5 years of son's death becoming destitute, not by his own fault.	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
Mother <sup>1</sup> .....	Under same conditions, even if she becomes widowed within 5 years of son's death.	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
	Living separated from father not by her own fault, and receiving no support from him, if 50 years old, blind, or incapable of profitable work at son's death. <sup>2</sup>	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
	Of illegitimate son, legally recognized by her before Nov. 12, 1916, if mother is unmarried, blind, 50 years old, or incapable of profitable work.	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
	If father through a penal sentence suffers loss or suspension of the pension. <sup>3</sup>	2,667 (534.53)	2,667 (534.53)	2,133 (411.67)
Orphan brothers and sisters.	If under age and (in case of sisters) unmarried. <sup>4</sup>	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
Family.....	If officer dies in captivity:			
	a. Because of injuries in service.....	4,000 (772.00)	4,000 (772.00)	3,200 (617.60)
	b. If cause of death unproved <sup>5</sup> .....	2,667 (534.53)	2,667 (534.53)	2,133 (411.67)

<sup>1</sup> Maximum amount. For reductions see pp. 166-167.<sup>2</sup> If, however, father has legal requirements for obtaining pension, it will be divided in equal parts between the parents. In case of remarriage the mother ceases to receive the pension.<sup>3</sup> Temporary allowance. At father's death mother receives full pension.

war, dying of injuries incurred in service, dying in captivity, or missing—Continued.

Deceased—Continued.

Lieutenant colonel.		Major.		Captain.			Lieutenant.				Sub-lieutenant.
After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 10 years in grade or 25 years' service.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	After 15 years in grade.	After 10 years in grade or 25 years' service.	After 5 years in grade.	Less than 5 years in grade.	
Captain of frigate.		Captain of corvette.		Lieutenant of warship.			Sublieutenant of warship.				Midshipman.
After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 10 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	After 15 years.	After 10 years.	After 5 years.	Less than 5 years.	
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (362.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (363.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
1,867 (364.53)	1,600 (308.80)	1,467 (284.96)	1,333 (257.27)	1,360 (262.48)	1,253 (241.83)	1,147 (221.37)	1,040 (200.72)	987 (190.49)	827 (159.61)	720 (138.96)	1,000 (193.00)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (363.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
2,800 (540.40)	2,400 (463.20)	2,200 (484.60)	2,000 (386.00)	2,040 (393.72)	1,880 (363.84)	1,720 (330.96)	1,560 (308.08)	1,480 (285.64)	1,240 (238.32)	1,080 (208.44)	1,500 (289.50)
1,867 (364.53)	1,600 (308.80)	1,467 (284.96)	1,333 (257.27)	1,360 (262.48)	1,253 (241.83)	1,147 (221.37)	1,040 (200.72)	987 (190.49)	827 (159.61)	720 (138.96)	1,000 (193.00)

<sup>4</sup> If officer has been their necessary and chief support.

<sup>5</sup> Family may receive ordinary allowance if this is more favorable. If officer is declared missing, pension is reckoned as if he had died in captivity.

SCHEDULE 59.—*Italy.* Pensions to widows and other dependents of noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men killed in war, dying of injuries incurred in service, dying in captivity, or missing.<sup>1</sup>

(The dependent's pension is in general one-half the privileged disability pension with changes and exceptions as indicated in the table.)

[Sources: Law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70, codified text (Codici e leggi Ustali d'Italia, Vol. II, pp. 2693, ff., Milan, Hoepli, 1905); law of June 25, 1912, No. 667 (Gazz. Uff., July 5, 1912); decree of the lieutenant general, Nov. 12, 1916, No. 1538 (Gazz. Uff., Nov. 28, 1916); decree of the lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876 (Gazz. Uff., June 7, 1917).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in lire; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Beneficiaries.	Stipulations.	Army.				Navy				
		a.	b.	c.	d.	e.	Boatswain, etc.	Second boatswain, etc.	Subboat-swain, etc.	Selected seaman, etc.
Widow and children: Widow <sup>2</sup> or widow and 1 child under 18, or widow and 2 children under 18. Each additional child <sup>3</sup> <sup>6</sup> .....	If marriage has been authorized according to the requirements of the military authorities. <sup>4</sup> If under 18 years of age.....	1,500 (289,50)	1,120 (216,16)	840 (162,12)	840 50 50	630 (121,59)	630 50 50	630 (121,59)	630 50 50	533 (102,87)
Full orphans to number of 4..... Each additional orphan <sup>6</sup> .....	If under age, and, in case of daughters, unmarried..... If under 18 years of age.....	1,500 (289,50)	1,120 (216,16)	840 (162,12)	840 50 50	630 (121,59)	630 50 50	630 (121,59)	630 50 50	533 (102,87)
Illegitimate children.....	If legally recognized: <sup>7</sup> a. In absence of others having claim..... b. In competition with the widow or with the legitimate or legitimized children of the soldier.	1,500 (289,50) (8)	1,120 (216,16) (8)	840 (162,12) (8)	840 50 50	630 (121,59) (8)	630 50 50	630 (121,59) (8)	630 50 50	533 (102,87)

Amounts allowed annually to dependents according to grade of deceased. (For equivalent grades, see Schedule 55, p. 162.)

Other dependents (in absence of widow and orphans), if soldier has been their necessary and chief support: <sup>9</sup>									
Father <sup>10</sup> .....									
Mother <sup>10</sup> .....									
Orphan brothers and sisters.....									
c. In competition with parents, or brothers and unmarried sisters under 18 years of age.									
If widowed, blind, 50 years old, or incapable of wage-earning, or within 5 years of son's death becoming destitute not by his own fault.	750 (144, 75)	560 (108, 05)	420 (81, 06)	315 (60, 80)					
Under same conditions, and even if she becomes widowed within 5 years of her son's death.	1,500 (289, 50)	1,120 (216, 16)	840 (162, 12)	630 (121, 59)					
Living separated from father not by her own fault, and receiving no support from him, if 50 years old, blind, or incapable of wage-earning at date of son's death. <sup>11</sup>	1,500 (289, 50)	1,120 (216, 16)	840 (162, 12)	630 (121, 59)					
Of illegitimate son, legally recognized by her before November 12, 1916, if mother is unmarried, blind, 50 years old, or incapable of wage earning.	1,500 (289, 50)	1,120 (216, 16)	840 (162, 12)	630 (121, 59)					
If father through penal sentence suffers loss or suspension of pension.									
If under age, and, in case of sisters, unmarried.....									

<sup>1</sup> Dependents of a soldier dying in captivity from injuries incurred in service receive the full pension. If connection between his death and the service is unproved, the dependents receive two-thirds of this pension unless the ordinary allowance is judged more favorable. Pensions to dependents of a soldier missing are paid to the same amounts and on the same conditions.

In addition to the military pensions shown on the chart, a provision by special decree (decree of the lieutenant general, Sept. 7, 1918, No. 1185, Gazz. Uff. Sept. 22, 1916) should be noted, granting an annual pension of L. 1,800 (\$347.40) to the widow and L. 600 (\$115.80) to each child under 21 of any Italian citizen executed for political reasons by the Austro-Hungarian Government.

<sup>2</sup> On remarriage the widow forfeits the pension, but receives a lump sum equal to 4 yearly payments, if she is not above 35 years of age and there are no orphans; otherwise the widow may receive a lump sum equal to 3 yearly payments if she is not above 50 years of age.

a Law of Feb. 21, 1916, No. 70 (codified text), Art. 106.

When the widow for any reason lives apart from any or all of the children of her own or of a former marriage of the soldier, she receives one-half the widow's pension or indemnity.

The other half shall be divided in equal parts among all the children of the dead soldier who have a right to it.

If there is but one child, that child receives one-fourth of the indemnity or the widow's pension.

4 If the widow is unable to obtain the pension because her marriage during the soldier's service was not authorized:

a. The legitimate children receive pension if marriage was contracted before time of wound or disease leading to father's death, or

b. The legitimated children born before said time.

<sup>5</sup> In case of the division of the pension (see footnote 3), the increase goes wholly to the children.

<sup>6</sup> The increase ceases or is reduced by degrees to nothing as the number of children on the basis of which the pension is determined is reduced by the children's reaching 18 years or by death, marriage, etc.

<sup>7</sup> To acquire rights to pension, illegitimate children must have been acknowledged by the soldier not later than 90 days before the conclusion of peace.

<sup>8</sup> Illegitimate children living with the family are considered as orphans of a previous marriage and share equally with the other children. In case of the division of the pension (see footnote 3), however, the share of each one of the illegitimate is reduced by one-fifth, this amount going to increase the share of the other participants.

<sup>9</sup> In case of competitive claims of ascendants, collaterals, and illegitimate, half of the pension goes to the illegitimate and half to the other dependents.

<sup>10</sup> When it is ascertained after payment of pension that parents can provide in part for their own support, pension shall be reduced by one-third or one-half or two-thirds, according to the ascertained income. When amount of latter equals pension, pension is revoked.

When parents from a state of indigence come into circumstances which would have given them no right to a pension, pension is reduced as above or lapses.

<sup>11</sup> If, however, father has legal requirements for obtaining pension, it is divided in equal parts between the parents. In case of remarriage mother ceases to receive the pension.

During the interval between claim to a pension and its payment, provision is made for monthly payments on account to the indigent dependents of deceased soldiers. Grant of these payments is made by the minister of the treasury if proof is given of the urgent need of the claimants through loss of their chief and necessary support. Such payments are granted for a year but under exceptional circumstances may be extended. They may not amount to more than three-fifths of the pension presumably due. In the capital of a Province these payments are made by the local section of the royal treasury and in other communes by the postal officials.<sup>1</sup>

#### OTHER SOURCES OF MAINTENANCE.

The temporary allowance and the renewable allowance given for a disability of Category IX and for the case where definite decision can not be made on the seriousness and permanence of a soldier's injury, respectively, may revert to the family in case of the soldier's death according to the apposite articles of the basic pension law. The temporary allowance, however, can be granted dependents only for so long as it was originally granted to the soldier.<sup>2</sup> For the continuance to dependents of the extra pay given with the medal for military valor application must be made to the division of pensions in the ministry of the treasury.

Sons of officers and soldiers deceased from injuries incurred in service are given free educational opportunities, board and tuition in military schools and colleges, and preference for appointments in the Government service. Special preference is given to children of the families most in need. Such share in the pension as a boy may have who is thus being educated at the Government's expense, is transferred to the other children entitled to the pension. All minor dependents of officers and soldiers under these conditions are exempt from school taxes.

Daughters of pensioned sailors or daughters pensioned after their father's death receive at their marriage, in case they are still under 18, a lump sum as dower equal to one-half the father's annual pension. Daughters of pensioned marines receive similarly not less than 100 lire (\$19.30).<sup>3</sup>

#### ADMINISTRATION.

Military pensions, like civil pensions, are paid from a general pension fund invested in Government securities. To create this fund all minor pension funds were consolidated, Government appropriations were made, and a system of assessment instituted on the salaries of all civil and military employees.

<sup>1</sup> Decree of lieutenant general, Nov. 12, 1916, No. 1598, *Gazetta Ufficiale*, Nov. 28, 1916.

<sup>2</sup> Decree of lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, *Gazzetta Ufficiale*, June 7, 1917.

<sup>3</sup> Law of Feb. 21, 1895, No. 70, codified text, *Codici e Leggi Usuali d'Italia*, Milan, Hoepli, 1905.

Pensions are paid monthly by the court of accounts, and all claims must be filed with the general secretary.

It is not surprising that an administration adapted to the regular course of business in times of peace should have been unable to meet the strain of the terrific demands of the war. Private effort responded to the general need, and the Consorzio Laziale di Assistenza ai Lavoratori, with the assistance of prominent lawyers and members of Parliament, assumed throughout all Italy the task of expediting the claims to pensions and their payment. On its side the Government has made large increases in the force of men employed and used every effort to make headway through the enormous amount of business. The formalities of the old procedure have been to some extent modified in the interest of efficiency; a decree of April 2, 1916, canceled the obligation to secure a retirement certificate before obtaining a disability pension or allowance, and a decree of May 1, 1916, further simplified the procedure. In the decree of November 12, 1916, the limit set for the payment of the individual's pension is two years.

**SCHEDULE 60.—*Italy.* Categories of disability for soldiers mutilated or invalidated because of war or other events of service.<sup>1</sup>**

**CATEGORY I.**

1. Loss of four limbs, from complete loss to loss of hands and feet only.
2. Loss of three limbs, from complete loss to loss of two hands and one foot.
3. Organic and incurable changes in both eyes, with resulting absolute and permanent blindness.
4. Loss of upper limbs, from complete loss to loss of both hands only.
5. Permanent, incurable and serious changes of mental faculties to the point of rendering the individual totally incapable of any profitable work, or dangerous to himself or others.
6. Lesions of the central nervous system (brain and spinal marrow) with permanent consequences serious enough to cause, either singly or together, profound and irreparable disturbance to the functions most necessary to organic and social life.
7. Loss of both lower limbs (disarticulation or amputation of the thighs).
8. Loss of two limbs, upper and lower on the same side (disarticulation or amputation of the arm and thigh).
9. Organic and incurable change in one eye, producing its absolute and permanent blindness, with the visual acuteness of the other eye reduced to the power to count the fingers at the distance of ordinary short-distance vision.
10. Loss of an upper and lower limb, not on the same side (disarticulation or amputation of arm and thigh).
11. Total loss of one hand and two feet.
12. Total loss of one hand and one foot.
13. Total loss of all the fingers of two hands, or total loss of two thumbs and six or seven fingers.
14. Total loss of one thumb and eight other fingers.
15. Total loss of five fingers of one hand and of the first two of the other.
16. Total loss of both feet.

<sup>1</sup> Decree of lieutenant general, May 20, 1917, No. 876, Gazzetta Ufficiale, June 7, 1917.

17. All other organic or functional infirmities and lesions serious and permanent to the point of determining absolute incapacity for profitable work.

CATEGORY II.

1. Organic and incurable changes in both eyes, with such reduction of the visual acuteness as scarcely to permit counting of the fingers at the distance of ordinary short-distance vision.
2. Organic and incurable change in one eye producing absolute and permanent blindness with the visual acuteness of the other reduced from one-fiftieth to one-twenty-fifth of normal.
3. Organic, absolute and permanent deafness of both ears.
4. Destruction of the bones of the face, especially of the jawbones, and all other results of serious injuries to the face or to the mouth, such as to obstruct mastication, deglutition, or speech, or to cause notable deformities, notwithstanding prosthehsis.
5. Permanent, total or nearly total temporo-maxillary anchylosis.
6. Serious and permanent injuries to the respiratory apparatus, or of other organic apparatus and systems of the body, caused by the action of gas or noxious fumes.
7. All other organic lesions or affections of the larynx, trachea, or lungs, which cause serious and permanent injury to the respiratory functions.
8. Serious disease of the heart with evident symptoms, or serious and permanent affections of the pericardium.
9. Lesions and affections of the gastro-enteric canal and its associated glands, with serious and permanent loss of health.
10. Lesions and affections of the central nervous system (brain and spinal marrow), producing aphasia or other serious and permanent consequences, but not such as to reach the degree specified in numbers 5 and 6 of Category I.
11. Immobility of the head, in complete flexion or extension from an incurable cause, or the total and permanent rigidity or marked and permanent curvature of the spinal column.
12. Permanent paralysis, of central or peripheral origin, involving muscles or groups of muscles which regulate the essential functions of life, and from their character and duration judged incurable.
13. Cachexia and marasmus, resistant to cure.
14. Aneurism of the great arteries of the trunk or neck.
15. Serious and permanent lesions and affections of the hematopoietic organs.
16. Serious and permanent lesions and affections of the genito-urinary system.
17. Emasculation (complete loss of penis and testicles).
18. Artificial anus, incontinence of feces, fistula of the rectum and bladder, posterior urethral fistula, fistula of the liver, pancreas, spleen, stomach and intestines, if incurable.
19. Chronic arthritis, which through the number and importance of the joints affected has seriously diminished the functions of two or more limbs.
20. Loss of the right arm or forearm (disarticulation or amputation to the upper third of one or the other).
21. Total loss of six fingers, including both thumbs and index fingers.
22. Total loss of five fingers of the right hand and of two of the last four of the left.
23. Total loss of eight fingers, including or not including one of the thumbs.
24. Total loss of one thigh (disarticulation of the hip.)
25. Mediotarsal or subastralagoid amputation of both feet.

## CATEGORY III.

1. Organic and incurable changes in both eyes, such as to reduce the visual acuteness of both eyes from one-fiftieth to one-twenty-fifth of normal.
2. Organic and incurable changes in one eye producing absolute and permanent blindness, with the visual acuteness of the other reduced from one-twenty-fifth to one-twelfth of normal.
3. Permanent and serious labyrinthine vertigo.
4. Loss of the tongue or its serious and permanent injury, such as to interfere markedly with speech and deglutition.
5. Loss of or serious and permanent disturbance of speech.
6. Loss of the left upper arm or forearm (disarticulation or amputation to the upper third of one or the other).
7. Total loss of the right hand, or total loss of its fingers.
8. Total loss of five fingers on the two hands, including both thumbs.
9. Total loss of five fingers of the left hand and of two of the last four of the right.
10. Total loss of the thumbs and index fingers of both hands.
11. Total loss of one thumb together with that of an index finger, and of four other fingers on the two hands, the other thumb remaining intact.
12. Total loss of both index fingers and of five other fingers on the two hands, excluding the thumbs.
13. Loss of one thigh to the upper third.
14. Complete ankylosis of the hip or knee, with extreme flexion.
15. Total or almost total loss of the penis.
16. Loss of both testicles.
17. Scars or other serious and permanent results of burns or of other wounds which notably impair the functions of limbs, organs, or important parts of the body.

## CATEGORY IV.

1. Organic and incurable changes in both eyes, such as to reduce the visual acuteness of both eyes from one-twenty-fifth to one-twelfth of normal.
2. Organic and incurable change in one eye producing its absolute and permanent blindness, with the visual acuteness of the other eye reduced from one-twelfth to one-fourth of normal.
3. Total ankylosis of the right shoulder.
4. Loss of the left hand or total loss of its fingers.
5. Total loss of the last four fingers of the right hand or of its first three fingers.
6. Total loss of three fingers on the two hands, including both thumbs.
7. Total loss of one thumb and the two index fingers.
8. Total loss of one of the thumbs and of four other fingers on the two hands, excluding the index fingers and the other thumb.
9. Total loss of an index finger and of five or six other fingers on the two hands, excluding the thumbs.
10. Loss of one thigh to the middle third or the lower third.
11. Loss of one leg to the upper third.
12. Permanent results of fracture of principal bones (pseudo-arthroses, much deformed calluses which notably impair the function of a joint).

## CATEGORY V.

1. Organic and incurable changes of both eyes, such as to reduce the visual acuteness of both from one-twelfth to one-fourth of normal.
2. Organic and incurable changes in one eye producing its absolute and permanent blindness, with incurable change in the peripheral vision of the other, under the

form of a concentric restriction of the visual field, so as to leave unimpaired only the central zone or the zone nearest the center, or to leave lacunae of such size as to occupy half of the visual field, or equivalent sectors.

3. Purulent affections of the middle ear (bilateral, or unilateral) of a permanent nature, accompanied by serious complications, or producing a diminution of the auditory functions such as to reduce the distance at which the speaking voice can be heard to 50 centimeters.

4. Total ankylosis of the left shoulder.

5. Total ankylosis of the right elbow, fully or almost fully extended.

6. Total loss of the thumb and index finger of the right hand.

7. Total loss of the last four fingers of the left hand or of the first three fingers.

8. Total loss of both thumbs.

9. Total loss of one thumb and of three other fingers on the two hands, excluding the index fingers and the other thumb.

10. Total loss of 1 index finger and 4 other fingers, from the 2 hands, excluding the thumbs and the other index finger.

11. Loss of the 2 last phalanges of 7 or 8 fingers of the 2 hands, excluding the thumbs.

12. Loss of the uncial phalanges of 9 or 10 fingers, or those of 8 fingers, including the thumbs.

13. Loss of 1 leg to the lower third, or of 1 foot, either by unilateral mediotarsal or subastragaloïd amputation.

14. Tarsometatarsal amputation of both feet.

15. Total loss of the toes, or of 8 or 9 toes, including the great toes.

16. Diseases of the heart without manifest symptoms.

17. Extensive and evident arteriosclerosis.

18. Arterial aneurisms and arteriovenous aneurisms that do not noticeably interfere with the functions.

19. Tuberculosis of the lungs and all other tuberculous affections of any organs or apparatus, not sufficiently serious to be equivalent to the disabilities of any of the categories preceding.

20. Large visceral hernia that, judging by its extent, may be accompanied by serious and permanent complications.

21. Irreducible dislocation of one of the important articulations, which markedly impedes the function of the joint.

22. Epilepsy, the attacks of which are not frequent or severe enough to make it equivalent to the disabilities of any of the preceding categories.

#### CATEGORY VI.

1. Organic and incurable changes in one eye, producing its absolute and permanent blindness, with the visual acuteness of the other normal, or reduced from one-fourth to two-thirds of normal.

2. Organic and incurable changes in the peripheral vision in both eyes, under the form of the concentric restriction of the visual field to such a degree as to leave unimpaired only the central zone, or the zone nearest the center, or under the form of lacunae of such size as to occupy one-half of the visual field, or equivalent sectors.

3. Total ankylosis of the left elbow in complete or almost complete extension.

4. Total ankylosis of the right elbow in complete or almost complete flexion.

5. Total loss of the first 2 fingers of the left hand.

6. Total loss of 5 fingers on 2 hands, the last 3 of the one and 2 of the last three of the other.

7. Total loss of 1 of the thumbs, together with that of 2 other fingers on the 2 hands, excluding the index finger and the other thumb.

8. Total loss of the right thumb, together with the metacarpal bone corresponding, or together with the total loss of the three last fingers on the same hand.

9. Total loss of one of the index fingers and of three other fingers on the 2 hands, excluding the thumbs and the other index finger.
10. Loss of the 2 last phalanges of the last 4 fingers of the right hand or the loss of the last 2 phalanges of 5 or 6 fingers on the 2 hands, excluding the thumbs.
11. Loss of the uncial phalange of 6 or 7 fingers on the 2 hands, including that of 2 thumbs, or the loss of the uncial phalange of 8 fingers on 2 hands, including that of 1 thumb.
12. Total loss of 6 or 7 toes, including the great toes.
13. Total loss of 8 or 9 toes, including 1 great toe.
14. Nephritis, or its permanent consequences, resistant to cure.
15. Persistent muscular atrophy of peripheral origin and marked degree.
16. Muscular hernia, rupture of muscles or tendons, contractions, retractions, and adhesions of the muscles, tendons, or apo-neuroses, when by the altered function of the muscle they cause marked and permanent disturbances of important movements.

#### CATEGORY VII.

1. Organic and incurable changes in one eye—the other being intact, which reduce its visual acuteness from one-fiftieth to one-twelfth of normal.
2. Permanent bilateral impairment of hearing, unaccompanied by purulent affections of the middle ear, when the distance to which the speaking voice can be heard is reduced to 50 centimeters.
3. Deep and extensive injuries to the skull, with loss of the substance of the bone in its entire thickness, without functional disturbance of the brain.
4. Total ankylosis of the left elbow, in complete or almost complete flexion.
5. Complete ankylosis of the articulation (radiocarpal) of the right hand.
6. Total loss of 4 fingers of the 2 hands, excluding the thumbs and index fingers.
7. Total loss of the last 3 fingers of 1 hand.
8. Total loss of 2 index fingers.
9. Total loss of the right thumb.
10. Total loss of the left thumb, together with that of the metacarpal bone corresponding, or of one of the last 3 fingers of the same hand.
11. Total loss of 1 of the index fingers and of 2 other fingers on the 2 hands, excluding the thumb and the other index finger.
12. Loss of the two last phalanges of the index finger, and of those of three other fingers on the two hands, excluding those of the thumbs, or the loss of the same phalanges of the last four fingers of the left hand.
13. Loss of the uncial phalanges of three to five fingers on the two hands, including those of the thumbs.
14. Loss of the uncial phalanges of all the fingers of one hand, or the loss of the uncial phalanges of six or seven fingers on the two hands, including that of one thumb.
15. Loss of the uncial phalanges of seven or eight fingers on the two hands, excluding those of the thumbs.
16. Tarsometatarsal amputation of one foot.
17. Total loss of three to five toes, including the two great toes.
18. Total loss of six or seven toes, including one great toe, or of all or of the first four toes on one foot.
19. Total loss of seven or eight toes, excluding the great toes.
20. Total loss of the two great toes, including the metatarsal bones corresponding.
21. Loss of the two phalanges or the uncial phalange of the two great toes, together with the loss of the uncial phalanges of five to eight other toes.
22. Complete ankylosis (tibiotarsal) of both feet, without deviation and without marked impairment of walking.
23. Very large varicose veins, with many large knots, and their results (not merely the consequences of phlebitis), resistant to cure.

## CATEGORY VIII.

1. Organic and incurable changes in one eye (the other being intact) which reduce its visual acuteness from  $\frac{1}{2}$  to  $\frac{1}{4}$  of normal.
2. Organic and incurable changes in the peripheral vision of one eye (the other eye having normal central and peripheral vision) under the form of concentric restriction of the visual field to such a degree as to leave unimpaired only the central zone or the zone nearest the center, or under the form of lacunæ of such size as to occupy  $\frac{1}{2}$  of the visual field, or equivalent sectors.
3. Scars on the face or on any other part of the body which are extensive, painful, adherent, or retracted or easily ulcerating, except such as, by their seriousness, are equivalent to the infirmities of the preceding categories.
4. Results of lesions of the mouth, causing impairments of mastication, deglutition, and speech, together or separately, but not reaching the degree of Category II, No. 4 or Category III, Nos. 4 and 5.
5. Complete ankylosis (radiocarpal) of the articulation of the left hand.
6. Total loss of three fingers on the two hands, excluding thumbs and index fingers.
7. Total loss of one of the index fingers, and of another finger of the same hand, excluding the thumb.
8. Total loss of the left thumb.
9. Total loss of the last two phalanges of the index finger together with that of the last two phalanges of two other fingers of the same hand, excluding the thumb.
10. Total loss of four or five toes, including one great toe, or of the four last toes of one foot.
11. Total loss of five or six toes, excluding the great toes.
12. Loss of one great toe or of its uncial phalange together with the loss of the uncial phalange of six or eight other toes.
13. Complete tibiotarsal ankylosis of one foot, without deviation and without marked impairment of walking.
14. Marked contraction (not less than 6 centimeters) of a lower limb.

## CATEGORY IX.

1. Organic and incurable changes in both eyes, which reduce their visual acuteness from  $\frac{1}{4}$  to  $\frac{3}{4}$  of normal.
2. Loss of one of the testicles.
3. Absolute and permanent unilateral deafness.
4. Total loss of two of the last three fingers on one hand, or between the two hands.
5. Total loss of one of the index fingers, accompanied or not by the loss of one of the last three fingers of the other hand.
6. Loss of the last two phalanges of one of the index fingers, or of those of two other fingers on the two hands, excluding those of the thumbs and of the other index finger, or the loss of the same phalanges of the three last fingers of one hand, or of four on the two hands.
7. Loss of the two last phalanges of the two index fingers.
8. Loss of the uncial phalanges of the two thumbs.
9. Loss of the uncial phalange of one thumb, together with that of the uncial phalange of another finger of the hands.
10. Loss of the uncial phalanges of five or six fingers on the two hands, excluding the thumbs, or of the same phalanges of four fingers on the two hands, including one index finger.
11. Loss of one great toe and the metatarsal bone corresponding.
12. The total loss of two or three toes on one or on the two feet, including one great toe (the corresponding metatarsal bone being intact), or the total loss of four toes, excluding the great toes.

13. Total loss of the two great toes, accompanied or not by loss of the uncial phalanges of one or two toes of the same or of the other foot.
14. Loss of one of the great toes, or of the uncial phalanges of the two great toes, together with the loss of the uncial phalanges of three or four other toes.
15. Total loss of the uncial phalanges of seven or eight toes, excluding the great toes.
16. Neuroses, resistant to cure, except those that by their seriousness are equivalent to the infirmities of the preceding categories.

#### CATEGORY X.

1. Cicatricial stenosis of the external auricular canal, permanent, bilateral or unilateral, or the total loss, bilateral or unilateral, of the auricle, or other permanent lesions of the auricle which constitute marked deformity.
2. Total loss of a little finger.
3. Total loss of the two last phalanges of two fingers, on one or both hands, excluding those of the thumbs and index fingers.
4. Loss of the uncial phalange of one thumb.
5. Loss of the uncial phalanges of the index fingers, or the loss of the uncial phalanges of four fingers on the two hands, excluding the thumbs and index fingers.
6. Loss of the uncial phalanges of two or three of the last four fingers on the two hands, including, or not including, that of an index finger.
7. Total loss of two or three toes on the two feet, excluding the great toes.
8. Total loss of one of the great toes, or of the uncial phalanges of both great toes, accompanied or not accompanied by the loss of the uncial phalanges of one or two others of the four last toes.
9. Loss of the two phalanges of a great toe or of its uncial phalange, together with the loss of the uncial phalanges of four or five other toes on the two feet.
10. Total loss of the uncial phalanges of five or six toes, excluding the great toes.

#### REFERENCES.

Gazzetta Ufficiale. Tipografia delle Mantellate. Rome.

Ministero della Guerra. Giornale Militare Ufficiale. Rome.

Ministero della Marina. Giornale Ufficiale della Marina. Romè.

Ministero di Agricoltura, Industria e Commercio. Annali del Credito e della Previdenza. Provvedimenti in materia di economia e di finanza emanati in Italia in seguito alla guerra Europea. Series II, vol. 10, parts 1, 2, 3. Rome.

Collezione Celerifera delle Leggi, Decreti, Istruzioni e Circolari. Stamperia Reale. Rome.

Raccolta Ufficiale delle Leggi e dei Decreti del Regno d'Italia. Rome.

Codice e Leggi Usuali d'Italia. Milan, Hoepli.

Bonomi, Ivanoe. Le Pensioni di Guerra. Nuova Antologia, June 1, 1916.

Fuschini, G. Pensioni Civili e Pensioni di Guerra. Nuova Antologia, June 1, 1916.

**NETHERLANDS.<sup>1</sup>****INTRODUCTION.**

Disability and service pensions and separation allowances are features of the Dutch defense acts, as are also pensions to the survivors of deceased and pensioned soldiers and sailors of all ranks. The present separation allowance is 2 florins (80.4 cents) a day maximum for the period of the war; it is based on the earning capacity of the enlisted man, and is not necessarily related to the number of dependents. Disability pensions are for loss of military capacity as well as for loss of civil earning capacity; they vary with the grade of rank and are noncontributory, being paid from State funds. Pensions to survivors are, on the other hand, partially contributory, the assessments upon those likely to have dependents being in proportion to the pension of the particular grade of rank in case of the enlisted man in the Army and of the wage class in the Navy. (See page 188.) Widows and children only are specifically mentioned as dependents; the amounts paid them are in proportion to their number; and to entitle them to a pension the deceased must have died in discharge of official duties or from wounds in war or service, and within a year of the injury causing death.

Separate laws, not discussed in this summary, are applicable to men in the colonial service and to their widows and children.

**SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.**

Separation allowances are paid to families of those called into training in the reserves and to volunteers in the militia; as wage earners with families dependent upon them are not drafted into the militia there is no question of separation allowances for drafted men. The allowances are in the nature of bonuses to the family of the soldier or sailor to compensate for his loss of earnings. The maximum fixed by law is the same for each family, but the minister of war exercises discretion below that limit in fixing the amounts, having regard to the differences in the cost of living in different localities and the earning capacity of the man before enlistment. Thus it is provided in the laws that the amount to any family shall not exceed the difference between the earnings contributed by the man to the support of the family and the amount necessary for his own support. The allowances are not a matter of right, automatically payable, but rest upon the fact of dependence and need. As a matter of fact the maximums fixed by law have been paid only in a small proportion of the cases. It should be noted that the amounts have been increased since mobilization upon the outbreak of the European war. Prior to the war the maximum ranged from 1 florin (40.2 cents) per day to 2 florins (80.4 cents), depending on

<sup>1</sup> The material on the Netherlands was prepared by Mr. Leifur Magnusson.

the class of service; but for the period of the war the maximum has recently been fixed at 2 florins (80.4 cents) a day for all classes of service.<sup>1</sup>

The separation allowances are administered by the war and navy departments each in their own sphere; but direct payment takes place through the mayors of communes. The laws being general in their terms, numerous decrees and circulars of the departments define the scope of the allowances.

While the mayors make the payments of allowances as having the best access to first-hand information about the dependents in any case, it was found soon after the war broke out that dissimilarities of administration were creeping in. The minister of war was interpellated on the subject in Parliament on December 15, 1914,<sup>2</sup> and then promised to use the services of the recently organized committees on relief in the different Provinces; two weeks later he directed that consideration should be given to differences in the cost of living in different cities in the fixing of the amounts paid.<sup>3</sup> On March 12, 1915, the minister of marine also directed the relief committees to pay the allowances to the dependents of sailors.<sup>4</sup>

The separation allowances have been less than the maxima usually fixed by law. In Amsterdam, for example, in October, 1915, the average weekly allowance per man granted to 2,593 mobilized men was 8.47 florins (\$3.40); the probable weekly earnings could be estimated at 18.90 florins (\$7.60),<sup>5</sup> a difference of 10.43 florins (\$4.20) between the amount of the possible earnings and the separation allowance.<sup>6</sup>

At the beginning of the war private relief was necessary to supplement the allowances.<sup>7</sup> This relief was supplied by the Royal National Relief Committee (Kon. Nationaal Steuncomité), organized on the initiative of the Queen, August 6, 1914,<sup>7</sup> and composed of representatives of various social reform and labor organizations. It was created to coordinate private relief work, and is itself a voluntary privately supported charitable association, although subsidized<sup>8</sup> from time to time by the Government; its secretary is a minister of state.

Relief work of a general character and affecting all wage earners has been much extended during mobilization. The national and local councils of labor—which are official bodies—have urged employers to pay wages to those of their employees who are called into service,<sup>9</sup> and the Dutch federation of brewers among others has passed a resolution

<sup>1</sup> Law of June 27, 1916, *Staatsblad* No. 293.

<sup>2</sup> *Maandschrift van het Centraal Bureau voor de Statistiek*, The Hague, 1915, vol. 10, p. d.

<sup>3</sup> *Idem*, p. 117.

<sup>4</sup> *Idem*, p. 405.

<sup>5</sup> Kon. Nationaal Steuncomité 1914: *Voornaamste bescheiden*, The Hague, 1915, vol. 7, p. 45.

<sup>6</sup> *Idem*, 1917, vol. 9, pp. 55, 56.

<sup>7</sup> *Maandschrift van het Centraal Bureau voor de Statistiek*, The Hague, 1914, vol. 9, p. 626.

<sup>8</sup> *Idem*, 1914, vol. 9, pp. 844, 845.

<sup>9</sup> *Idem*, 1914, vol. 9, p. 661.

to pay its men in service who hold no commission three-fourths pay less any amounts the Government may contribute. Wages of State employees called to arms have been continued for not exceeding eight and one-half months a year while in service.<sup>1</sup> Other instances may be cited, for a cursory examination of the journal of the Dutch statistical office (*Maandschrift van het Centraal Bureau voor de Statistiek*) shows among other things that since the outbreak of the war unemployment benefits have been extended in their scope; that cost of living bonuses have been paid to families in need; that the State on occasion has fixed maximum prices of certain of the more important necessities; and that export embargoes have been invoked, all in the attempt to offset the burden of high prices falling upon the wage earner.

Finally, wives of those in the militia who are themselves wage earners will be protected by compulsory sickness insurance, which grants benefits for care in cases of confinement or of miscarriage. This law, enacted June 5, 1913 (*Staatsblad* 203), but not yet in force so far as known, will grant benefits of 70 per cent of the daily wages, beginning with the first day of illness and cover a period not exceeding six months. Benefits are refused, however, if the pregnancy occurred earlier than six months before insurance was taken out, or if the miscarriage took place within six months of the beginning of the insurance. The benefits are raised by contributions, half from the employer and half from the employee; the half share of each wage earner insured ranging from 0.25 florins (10.1 cents) per month to 2 florins (80.4 cents) per month, according to his earnings. The highest class of wage earners included under this system of benefits receive 3.50 florins (\$1.41) a day; the lowest wage recognized is 70 centimes (28.14 cents) a day, and those below that grade may be exempted from taking out the insurance.

#### RETIREMENT PENSIONS AND PENSIONS FOR DISABILITY.<sup>2</sup>

Disability and long-service pensions are paid to all officers and enlisted personnel in both Army and Navy for wounds or injuries in service involving loss of military capacity or earning power or for continued years of service. The basic pension acts at present in force were passed on June 9, 1902, and have since been frequently amended; they were codified in a decree of May 10, 1915 (*Staatsblad* No. 217). The provisions of an earlier act of March 21, 1896 (*Staatsblad* No. 50), are still in effect as regards the organization of the pension boards. The provisions of this pension legislation covering both the land and sea forces are quite identical in terms, having been enacted and amended

<sup>1</sup> *Maandschrift van het Centraal Bureau voor de Statistiek*, The Hague, 1915, vol. 10, p. 1019.

<sup>2</sup> See Schedule 61, on annual pensions to officers and their widows and children, p. 190, and Schedule 62, p. 192, on annual pensions to noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.

concurrently from time to time. The laws of 1902 cover, besides disability and long service of enlisted men and officers, also the matter of survivors' pensions to the widows and children of officers, while the laws of June 29, 1909 (Staatsblad Nos. 202, 203), provide for the establishment of a special fund for the payment of pensions to the widows and children of voluntary enlisted men. There is no problem as to the payment of pensions to the survivors of drafted men, because only those having no dependents are drafted.

Pensions for length of service are granted to officers of the line in both Army and Navy after 40 years of service; to officers in the Hospital Corps after 30 years; and to all enlisted men after 30 years, provided in all cases that officers have reached the age of 50 and enlisted men the age of 45. Partial pensions for fewer years of service are also granted as shown in the appended tables.

Disability pensions are paid for loss of military capacity resulting from wounds in war or from discharge of official duties while training; and for disability for service from other causes not voluntarily brought about or the result of gross carelessness.

A "full pension" is fixed for each grade of rank, which pension becomes the basis for computing the amount of the pension for each degree of disability or loss of earning capacity; this basic pension is increased by one-half its amount for permanent total loss of earning capacity accompanied by the loss of two or more limbs or both eyes; and by one-fourth for permanent total loss of earning capacity coupled with the loss of one limb. It becomes the actual amount paid for total permanent loss of earning capacity, and for completion of the required years of service upon which service pensions are conditioned. Similar amounts, as above for permanent total disability, are paid for temporary total disability as long as it lasts. The amount of the basic pension varies from 240 florins (\$96.48) a year for the lowest grade in both Army and Navy up to 600 florins (\$241.20) for the highest grade of noncommissioned officer. The highest pension in either the Army or the Navy is 3,000 florins (\$1,206) a year. The varying amounts for each grade of rank are set forth in the accompanying tables.

Three-fourths of the basic pension is paid for partial loss of earning capacity; but this amount may be increased according to the years of service, amounting, in the case of officers to one-fortieth of the basic pension multiplied by the years of service; and one-thirtieth in the case of enlisted men.

The service pensions vary with the years of service, but in no case are they less than one-half of the basic pension of the grade in question.

The pension is granted to officers as of the rank held for the two years next preceding retirement; but if the particular rank has not been filled for two consecutive years, then for the rank prior thereto. If, however, the rank has been filled for six consecutive years prior

to retirement a bonus is paid (1) to junior lieutenants of the first class and captains in the Navy and to captains in the Army, equal to one-sixth of their basic pension, and (2) to all other officers in both Army and Navy ranging from the above grades down to that of corporal, one-tenth of the basic pension. Furthermore, if the rank for which the pension is granted has been filled for more than six years, the first group named above are allowed an additional pension for each year in excess of six—but not reckoning more than 12 years in the grade—of one-thirty-sixth of their basic pension, and those in the second group one-sixtieth.

All enlisted men in either Army or Navy who have been in the service 35 years are granted a supplementary pension of 10 per cent of their basic pension, and after 40 years of service, 20 per cent.

In counting years of service credit is given for service in different branches of the defense force, for service in certain civil employments on public works and fortifications, and in the colonial service. In the last-named instance double time is reckoned. Service before the sixteenth year of age is not calculated, nor is time spent on leave or release from official duties. Where double time is counted certain flat increases in pensions are allowed; for each year of service counted double: 75 florins (\$30.15) for commissioned officers; 28 florins (\$11.26) for engineers and assistant engineers in the Navy; 25 florins (\$10.05) for noncommissioned officers other than corporal; and 15 florins (\$6.03) for all other enlisted men.

Among other provisions defining pension rights may be mentioned that which directs the loss of pension for dishonorable conduct or discharge; and provision for a temporary pension in certain instances.

#### PENSIONS TO WIDOWS AND CHILDREN.<sup>1</sup>

Widows and children of deceased soldiers and sailors and officers, and of those retired on a pension and dying out of the service, are entitled to a pension if death has been the result of wounds in war or injuries in service or discharge of official duties, provided death occurs within a year of the happening of the injury which caused it. No provision is made for ascendants or collaterals as dependents. Those not entitled to a pension are (1) widows or children provided for from other pension funds, as for instance those of men in the colonial service; (2) widows married to a discharged officer or soldier or sailor after his fifty-sixth year; and (3) legitimate or legitimated children of a marriage contracted after the fifty-sixth year of age of the discharged or retired party; (4) widows who have married a discharged man or retired officer; (5) illegitimate children are by implication excluded from benefits as are (6) children over 18 years of age and (7) those younger if married.

<sup>1</sup> See Schedule 63, p. 194, on annual pensions to widows and children of noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.

The amounts of the pensions for widows and children of commissioned officers are flat amounts graded according to the rank of the deceased and regardless of the number of dependents. The highest survivors' pension in either the Army or Navy is 1,150 florins (\$462.30), paid to the widows and children of a general and a vice admiral.

For enlisted men in the Army the widow's pension is never in excess of one-half of the basic pension of the grade of rank of the deceased; but for the purposes of this calculation the basic pension of the highest class of enlisted man is never reckoned in excess of 440 florins (\$176.88), so that the maximum pension for the widow of an enlisted man can not exceed 220 florins (\$88.44) a year. The pensions of the widows and children cumulate, and there is added to the widow's pension certain proportions of the basic pension of the deceased subject to the same maximum limitation as above. These proportions for the children increase with each child up to five. They are shown in the table following together with the actual amounts which would be paid to each specified number of children of a deceased father entitled to the maximum pension of an enlisted man, or 440 florins (\$176.88) as already explained.

*Proportion of basic pension and amount of pension of each specified number of children of the highest rank of enlisted man.*

Number of children.	Proportion of maximum basic pension, 440 florins. (\$176.88).	Amount of annual pension.
1 child.	8/40	88 florins (\$35.38).
2 children	11/40	121 florins (\$48.64).
3 children	14/40	154 florins (\$61.91).
4 children	17/40	187 florins (\$75.17).
5 or more children	20/40	220 florins (\$88.44).

If the widow dies or remarries, or if the children are completely orphaned, the proportion of the pension of the grade or rank of the deceased father to which the children would be entitled would be as follows:

*Proportion of basic pension and amount of pension paid to each specified number of fully orphaned children of the highest rank of enlisted man.*

Number of children.	Proportion of maximum basic pension, 440 florins. (\$176.88).	Amount of annual pension.
1 child.	10/40	110 florins (\$44.22).
2 children	15/40	165 florins (\$66.33).
3 or more children	20/40	220 florins (\$88.44).

The examples above are for the maximum possible pension which survivors of enlisted personnel can receive. As shown by the appended tables the basic pensions differ between the various grades of rank, being in some cases as low as 240 florins (\$96.48), in which case the widow's pension would be 120 florins (\$48.24) a year.

The amounts of the basic pensions for different ranks of the enlisted personnel in the Navy for the purpose of calculating survivors' pensions are not fixed according to the grade of rank but according to the wage class of the enlisted man. The different classes grouped according to monthly wages and the amounts of the corresponding basic annual pensions are as follows:

- I. 65 florins (\$26.13) and over, 440 florins (\$176.88).
- II. 55 florins (\$22.11) but less than 65 florins (\$26.13), 400 florins (\$160.80).
- III. 38 florins (\$15.28) but less than 55 florins (\$22.11), 360 florins (\$144.72).
- IV. 28 florins (\$11.26) but less than 38 florins (\$15.28), 250 florins (\$100.50).
- V. Less than 28 florins (\$11.26), 200 florins (\$80.40).

The pensions of widows and children form the same proportion of the above basic pensions of the different wage classes as they form of the basic pension of the grade of rank in the Army; but here the classification is by wages rather than rank. The most probable reason for this change of basis is that in the Navy so many of the enlisted men perform occupations common to civil life, and distinctions thus become occupational rather than military.

The ranks probably included in the first wage class above are warrant officer, sergeant major, and engineer major; in class II, engineman, sergeant, and warrant engineman; in class III, fireman of first grade, and corporal; in class IV, fireman, oiler, and seaman; while in class V, are included probably only the lowest rank occupations, apprentices, etc.

#### MISCELLANEOUS PROVISIONS.

As already noted pensions for disability and long service for both officers and enlisted personnel are noncontributory; pensions to survivors of officers are likewise noncontributory; while those for survivors of enlisted personnel are partially contributory. Parliamentary appropriations supply any deficiencies.

All enlisted men in the Army and Navy who are likely to have dependents as claimants to a pension are required to contribute 6/100 a year of the basic pension of their grade of rank in the Army or wage class in the Navy, but not exceeding 26.40 florins (\$10.61) a year; all pensioned soldiers or sailors contribute 3/100 a year, but not exceeding 13.20 florins (\$5.31) a year.

All pensions are forfeited if not claimed within five years; they are payable quarterly. They are not subject to seizure for debt other than debts for necessaries, nor can they be assigned. No provision is made for lump-sum payments.

The three schedules appended set forth the details of this pension legislation.

#### REFERENCES.

Staatsblad van het Koninkrijk der Nederlanden, 1896, 1901, 1902, 1909, 1915, 1916, 1917. The Hague, 1897-1917.

Maandschrift van het Centraal Bureau voor de Statistik, 1910 to date. The Hague, 1910 to date.

Staatsalmanak voor het Koninkrijk der Nederlanden, 1915. The Hague, 1914.

Koninklijk Nationaal Steuncomité, 1914. Voornaamste Bescheiden. The Hague, 1915-1917. Vols. 5, 7, 8, 9.

SCHEDULE 61.—*Netherlands. Annual pensions to officers and to their widows and children.*

[Source: Laws of June 9, 1902 (Staatsblad 87, 90), and subsequent amendments as codified in the decree of May 10, 1915 (Staatsblad 217).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in florins; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Branch of service and grade of rank.	Disability pensions.			Service pensions.		
	Permanent total disability (total loss of earning capacity) involving—			Full (40 years' service by age 50).		Survivors' pensions (widows and children).
	Basic pension of rank (all pensions calculated on this basis).	Permanent partial disability.	Partial.	Full (40 years' service by age 50).	Partial.	
Army.	Navy.	Loss of two or more limbs or both eyes (150 per cent of base).	Loss of one limb (125 per cent of base).	Other disability (basic pension).	Permanent partial disability.	General stipulations.
Vice admiral.....	3,000 (1,206.00)	4,500 (1,809.00)	3,750 (1,507.50)	3,000 (1,206.00)	3,000 (1,206.00)	All pensions: (1) Pension paid for rank held 2 years prior to discharge; if not for 2 years, for prior rank. (2) If rank filled 6 years at discharge, lump sum bonus, 1/6 of base pension, for each year in excess of 6 years, up to 12 years, in rank, 1/36 of base pension additional.
Major general.....	2,800 (1,125.60)	4,200 (1,688.40)	3,500 (1,407.00)	2,800 (1,125.60)	2,800 (1,125.60)	1,150 (462.30)
Colonel.....	2,500 (1,005.00)	3,750 (1,507.50)	3,125 (1,256.25)	2,500 (1,005.00)	2,500 (1,005.00)	950 (381.90)
Lieutenant colonel.....	2,300 (924.60)	3,450 (1,386.90)	2,875 (1,155.75)	2,300 (924.60)	2,300 (924.60)	850 (341.70)
Major.....	2,100 (844.20)	3,150 (1,266.30)	2,625 (1,055.25)	2,100 (844.20)	2,100 (844.20)	750 (301.50)
Captain.....	1,500 (603.00)	2,250 (904.50)	1,875 (753.75)	1,500 (603.00)	1,500 (603.00)	650 (261.30)
First lieutenant.....	1,000 (402.00)	1,500 (603.00)	1,250 (502.50)	1,000 (402.00)	1,000 (402.00)	600 (241.20)
Junior lieutenant.....	900 (361.80)	1,350 (542.70)	1,155 (464.31)	900 (361.80)	900 (361.80)	450 (180.90)
Second lieutenant.....	850 (341.70)	1,275 (512.55)	1,063 (427.32)	850 (341.70)	850 (341.70)	350 (140.70)
General superintendent.....	750 (301.50)	1,125 (452.25)	938 (377.08)	750 (301.50)	750 (301.50)	300 (120.60)
Superintendent of fortifications, first class.....	700 (281.40)	1,050 (422.10)	875 (351.75)	700 (281.40)	700 (281.40)	275 (110.55)
Superintendent of fortifications, second class.....						

Superintendent of fortifications, third class.	650 ..... Chief engineer . . . . .	975 (201.30) 750 (301.50) 650 (261.30)	813 (326.83) 938 (377.08) 813 (326.83)	650 (261.30) 750 (301.50) 650 (261.30)	650 (261.30) 750 (301.50) 650 (261.30)
Assistant engineer	.....	975 (391.35)	813 (261.30)	650 (261.30)	250 (100.50) 350 (140.70) 275 (110.55)

## SCHEDULE 62.—Netherlands. Annual disability and service pensions to noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.

[Source: Laws of June 9, 1902, Staatsblad 87, 90, and subsequent amendments as codified in the decree of May 10, 1915 (Sstaatsblad, 217).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in florins; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Branch of service and grade of rank.	Navy.	Disability pensions.			Service pensions. <sup>3</sup>		
		Permanent total disability (total loss of earning power).		Partial disability. <sup>2</sup>	Full pension.		Partial pension.
		Basic pension of rank. <sup>1</sup>	With loss of two or more limbs or both eyes (equals 150% base pension),		Age.	Amount (basic pension).	
Warrant officer.....	Warrant officer.....	600 (241.20)	900 (361.80)	750 (301.50)	600 (241.20)	50 (241.20)	600 (241.20)
Sergeant major.....	Sergeant major.....	500 (201.00)	750 (301.50)	625 (251.25)	500 (201.00)	50 (201.00)	500 (201.00)
Sergeant.....	Sergeant; warrant engineer.....	400 (160.80)	600 (241.20)	500 (201.00)	400 (160.80)	50 (160.80)	400 (160.80)
Corporal.....	Corporal; warrant engineer.....	300 (120.60)	450 (180.90)	375 (150.75)	300 (120.60)	45 (120.60)	300 (120.60)
Hospital orderly.....	Seaman, first and second class; warrant engineer.....	240 (112.56)	420 (168.84)	350 (140.60)	280 (112.56)	45 (112.56)	280 (112.56)
Private.....	Seaman, third class.....	240 (96.48)	360 (144.72)	300 (120.60)	240 (96.48)	45 (96.48)	240 (96.48)
Constabulary; Warrant officer.....	Constabulary; Warrant officer.....	675 (271.35)	1,013 (407.23)	844 (339.28)	675 (271.35)	50 (271.35)	675 (271.35)
Sergeant major.....	Engineer.....	600 (241.20)	900 (361.80)	750 (301.50)	600 (241.20)	50 (241.20)	600 (241.20)
Sergeant.....	Engineer major.....	500 (201.00)	750 (301.50)	625 (251.25)	500 (201.00)	50 (201.00)	500 (201.00)
Constabulary, first and second class.....	Constabulary, first and second class.....	450 (180.90)	675 (271.35)	563 (226.33)	450 (180.90)	45 (180.90)	450 (180.90)
Constabulary, third class.....	Constabulary, third class.....	240 (96.48)	360 (144.72)	300 (120.60)	240 (96.48)	45 (96.48)	240 (96.48)

(General stipulations.<sup>4</sup>)

[1. Wounds or disability received in time of war or in discharge of duty; or  
2. Other injuries in service not caused voluntarily or the result of gross carelessness.

3. General incapacity for military service provided there have been 10 years of service at age 50.

4. Pension to noncommissioned officer paid for rank held for two years prior to discharge, but if not held two years, then rank prior thereto.

upon

for each year

Engineerman (sergeant) . . . . .	400 (160, 80)	600 (241, 20)	500 (201, 00)	400 (160, 80)	of service in excess of 10 years.	5. Noncommissioned officers above corporal, holding rank of discharge 6 years get lump sum bonus of one-sixth of basic pension; others one-tenth: for each year additional up to 12 in rank former get additional pension of one-thirtieth-sixth of base, latter one-sixteenth. Grades of soldier and sea- man after 25 years in service 10 per cent of base addi- tional, and after 40 years, 20 per cent each year.
Engineerman (corporal) . . . . .	360 (144, 72)	540 (217, 08)	450 (180, 90)	360 (144, 72)		
Engineerman (corporal, second class) . . . . .	340 (136, 68)	510 (205, 02)	425 (170, 85)	340 (136, 68)		
Fireman (corporal) . . . . .	340 (136, 68)	510 (205, 02)	425 (170, 85)	340 (136, 68)		
Fireman oiler . . . . .	300 (120, 60)	450 (180, 90)	375 (150, 75)	300 (120, 60)		
Fireman, first class . . . . .	300 (120, 60)	450 (180, 90)	375 (150, 75)	300 (120, 60)		
Fireman, second class . . . . .	280 (112, 56)	420 (168, 84)	350 (140, 70)	280 (112, 56)		
Fireman, third class . . . . .	240 (96, 48)	360 (144, 72)	300 (120, 60)	240 (96, 48)		
Assistant fireman . . . . .	240 (96, 48)	360 (144, 72)	300 (120, 60)	240 (96, 48)		
Apprentice fireman . . . . .	240 (96, 48)	360 (144, 72)	300 (120, 60)	240 (96, 48)		

<sup>1</sup> All pensions are calculated on the basic pension.

<sup>2</sup> Or incapacity as defined in stipulation 3.

<sup>3</sup> Thirty years of service required for all enlisted men, except when coupled with slight disability, in which case general stipulation 3 applies.

<sup>4</sup> Stipulations 1 and 2 apply to disability pensions only; 3, 4, and 5 apply also to service pensions.

SCHEDULE 63.—*Netherlands. Annual pensions to widows and children of noncommissioned officers and other enlisted men.*

[Source: Laws of June 9, 1902 (Staatsblad 87, 90) and subsequent amendments as codified in the decree of May 10, 1915 (Staatsblad, 217); laws of June 29, 1909 (Staatsblad, 202, 203).]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in florins; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Branch of service and grade of deceased.	Basic pension of rank. <sup>1</sup>	Widows and children. <sup>2</sup>				Full orphans and children of remarried widow.			General stipulations.
		Widow.	One child.	Two children.	Three children.	Four children.	Five or more children.	One child.	
Army (ranks):									
Warrant officer.....	600 (241.20)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Sergeant major.....	500 (201.00)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Sergeant.....	400 (160.80)	200 (80.40)	80 (32.16)	110 (44.22)	140 (56.28)	170 (68.34)	200 (80.40)	100 (40.20)	150 (60.30)
Corporal.....	300 (120.60)	150 (60.30)	60 (24.12)	83 (38.37)	105 (42.21)	128 (51.46)	150 (60.30)	75 (30.15)	113 (45.43)
Hospital orderly.....	280 (112.56)	140 (56.28)	56 (22.51)	77 (30.95)	98 (39.40)	119 (47.84)	140 (56.28)	70 (28.14)	105 (42.21)
Private.....	240 (96.48)	120 (48.24)	48 (19.30)	66 (26.53)	84 (33.77)	102 (41.00)	120 (48.12)	60 (24.12)	90 (36.18)
Constabulary (ranks):									
Warrant officer.....	675 (271.35)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Sergeant major.....	600 (241.20)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Sergeant.....	500 (201.00)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Constabulary, first and second class.....	450 (180.90)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)
Constabulary, third class.....	240 (96.48)	120 (48.24)	48 (19.30)	66 (26.53)	84 (33.77)	102 (41.00)	120 (48.12)	60 (24.12)	90 (36.18)
Navy (monthly pay classes):									
I. 65 florins (\$26.13) and over (warrant officers, sergeant major, engineer major).	440 (176.88)	220 (88.44)	88 (35.38)	121 (48.64)	154 (61.91)	187 (75.17)	220 (88.44)	110 (44.22)	165 (66.33)

1. Death of husband in time of war or while in discharge of official duties.
2. Occurrence of death within one year of cause thereof.
3. Forfeiture of pension upon remarriage of widow.
4. Termination of pension to children at completed eighteenth year, or upon marriage, if younger.

(88.44)

(88.44)

(88.44)

(88.44)

(88.44)

(88.44)

(88.44)

II. 55 florins (\$22.11) but less than 65 florins (\$26.13), including engineers, sergeant, and warrant engineer.	400 (160.80)	200 (80.40)	80 (32.16)	110 (43.22)	140 (56.28)	170 (68.34)	200 (80.40)	100 (40.20)	150 (60.30)	200 (80.40)
III. 38 florins (\$15.28) but less than 55 florins (\$22.11), including firemen (first) and ranks of corporal.	360 (144.72)	180 (72.36)	72 (28.94)	99 (39.80)	126 (50.65)	153 (61.51)	180 (72.36)	90 (36.18)	135 (54.27)	180 (72.36)
IV. 28 florins (\$11.25) but less than 38 florins (\$15.28), including firemen, oilers, and seamen.	250 (100.50)	125 (50.25)	50 (20.10)	69 (27.74)	88 (35.38)	107 (43.01)	125 (50.25)	63 (25.32)	94 (37.79)	125 (50.25)
V. Less than 28 florins (\$11.25), including apprentices and lowest-rank occupations.	200 (80.40)	100 (40.20)	40 (16.08)	55 (22.11)	70 (28.14)	85 (34.17)	100 (40.20)	50 (20.10)	75 (30.15)	100 (40.20)

<sup>1</sup> On this basic pension of the grade of rank of the deceased are computed the amounts of the pensions of the widows and children; but for purpose of calculation the basic pension never exceeds 400 florins (\$176.88).

<sup>2</sup> The pension of the widow and that of the children cumulate if both survive.

RUSSIA.<sup>1</sup>SEPARATION ALLOWANCES.<sup>2</sup>

The separation allowance to an officer's family consists of (1) assigned pay—such part of the officer's salary as he himself may determine, above a minimum fixed by the Government at one-third; (2) ten rubles (\$5.15) per month for servant's wages; (3) either an apartment or rent allowance, varying in amount from 1,692 rubles (\$870.69) to 102 rubles (\$52.49) according to the rank and duties of officer; and (4) a gratuity and traveling expenses in case the family is compelled by military circumstances to leave their place of residence.

In case the officer is taken prisoner one-half of his salary is paid to his family.

In the absence of wife and children, families consisting of aged parents, brothers, and sisters, if they are dependent on the officer, are entitled to the allowance.

The separation allowance is paid at the end of each month, either by the Army unit to which the officer belongs, or, in case this is impracticable, by the local military authorities.

The separation allowances to families of enlisted men, as provided by the law of June 25, 1912,<sup>3</sup> are regulated as follows: Each person receives each month the cash value of the following products: 68 pounds of flour; 10 pounds of grits; 4 pounds of salt; and 1 pound of vegetable oil.<sup>4</sup> A child under 5 years of age receives one-half the amount. Apparently no allowance is paid to the families of men serving their required term.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Russian material has been prepared by Miss Anna Kalet.

<sup>2</sup> The value of the ruble used in this report is that of normal times, namely, \$0.5146. On July 1, 1917, the exchange value of the ruble had fallen to \$0.2325. Allowances and pensions to officers and enlisted men in the Russian Army and Navy and to their families are based on the military code of 1869, edition of 1910; on the orders of August 20, September 4, November 23, and November 27, 1914; on the laws of June 23 and 25, 1912; on the temporary orders of August 17 and November 17, 1914; on the laws of November 3, 1914, and on a law of 1916, printed in the Collection of Government Laws and Regulations (Sobranie Uzakonienii i Rasporiazhenii Pravitelstva) July 16, 1916. According to information from the United States Department of State the new Russian Government considers the present provision for soldiers' families unsatisfactory and is preparing a simplified and more liberal system which, it is hoped, will take effect in the autumn of 1917.

<sup>3</sup> Svod Zakonov Rossiiskoi Imperii (Codified Laws of Russia), edited by Dobrovolskii, St. Petersburg, 1913, Vol. III, supplement 56, p. 2714 ff.

<sup>4</sup> The measure used is the Russian pound, which equals nine-tenths of a pound avoirdupois.

<sup>5</sup> The monthly pay of an enlisted man (lowest grade) in time of war is 75 kopeks (39 cents) and for a non-commissioned officer (highest grade), 9 rubles (\$4.63).

SCHEDULE 64.—*Russia. Separation allowances to families of enlisted men.*<sup>1</sup>

[Russian pounds outside parentheses; American pounds inside parentheses.]

Recipients.		Amount.	Remarks.
Military persons.	Members of families entitled.		
Enlisted men in Army and Navy: 1. Reservists called to war service. 2. Soldiers compelled on account of war to remain in service after completing required term. 3. Members of the militia and volunteers in active service.	Wife and children (legitimate only); parents, grandparents; such as were previously supported by soldier.	A monetary allowance per capita per month equal to the cost of the following provisions: 68(61.2) pounds flour, 10 (.9) pounds grits, 4 (3.6) pounds salt, 1 (.9) pound vegetable oil. Each child under 5 years old receives half of this allowance.	Children over 17 receive the allowance only if they are incapacitated; married daughters receive no allowance in any case. The cost of these products is determined for each locality.

<sup>1</sup> Summary based on law of June 25, 1912, reprinted in *Svod Zakonov Rossiiskoi Imperii* (Codified Laws of Russia), edited by Dobrovolskii, St. Petersburg, 1913, Vol. III, supplement 56, p. 2714 ff; orders of Aug. 9, Dec. 10, and 22, 1914, reprinted in G. V. Severin, *Ranenye Ofitcery i Nizhnie Chiny*, Petrograd, 1914, pp. 119, 129, 177.

The following members of the family are entitled to the allowance: Wife and children, parents and grandparents, but only such of these latter as were previously supported by the soldier. Allowances are granted to legitimate families only.

The necessary funds are transmitted from the treasury of each provincial government to the treasuries of the districts into which the Province is divided, and there given out under receipt to the representative official of each municipality or township.

### PENSIONS.

#### DISABILITY PENSIONS.

The law of June 23, 1912,<sup>1</sup> providing pensions to officers in the Army was extended on November 3, 1914, to include naval officers. The pensions are divided into two classes according to the seriousness of the disability involved. Those of the first class are due to men who are permanently incapacitated and require the constant care of another person. For such disability due to war, regardless of the length of his service, or for such disability incurred in peace time after 25 years of service, the officer receives his salary and in addition the table money and supplementary allowance drawn by him while in active service. According to the data for 1913 this pension would vary for generals from 4,200 rubles (\$2,161.32) to 6,000 rubles (\$3,087.60); for colonels and lieutenant colonels from 2,400 rubles (\$1,235.04) to 3,900 rubles (\$2,006.94); and for the remaining ranks it varies from 720 rubles (\$370.51) to 1,740 rubles (\$895.40). The pension for this kind

<sup>1</sup> *Sobranie Uzakonenii i Rasporiajenii Pravitelstva* (Collection of Laws and Orders), 1912, 2nd semester No. 1225.

of disability incurred in peace after a service of less than 25 years is 60 per cent of the salary.

Pensions of the second class are due to officers also permanently incapacitated but not requiring the care of another person. If incapacity occurred in the war after 5 years of active service or less, 60 per cent of salary is paid; an increase of 2 per cent is made for each additional year; after 25 years the pension is 100 per cent. In time of peace, 50 per cent instead of 60 per cent is paid after 5 years, and 100 per cent only after a service of 30 years.

Application for these pensions must be sent to the commander of the regiment, or corresponding unit in which the pensioner served. The pensions are paid from the treasury of each Province.

The officer who becomes ill while serving at the front or who is wounded receives part of his salary, free hospital treatment, and, if sent to a hospital outside of the place of his residence, 75 kopeks (39 cents) daily; if treated at home, he receives from 1 to 2 rubles (51 cents to \$1.02) daily, according to locality. He is also indemnified for loss of property. On his return to service a traveling allowance is paid him consisting of fare and 1.50 to 2 rubles (77 cents to \$1.02) daily, according to rank.

Disability pensions to soldiers, determined by the law of June 25, 1912, are very much smaller. For privates, they vary from 216 rubles (\$111.15) annually to 30 rubles (\$15.44), according to the degree of incapacity. Beneath the two classes of total incapacity (100 per cent loss of working power), the first of invalids requiring the constant care of another person and the second of invalids not requiring such care, pensions are graded to loss of working power according as this loss has been from 100 to 70 per cent, 70 to 40 per cent, or 40 to 10 per cent, respectively. For noncommissioned officers these same classes hold, but they receive the private's pension increased by 10 per cent after one year of service and by 20 per cent after five years of service.

## SCHEDULE 65.—Russia. Pensions for enlisted men.

[Amounts outside parentheses are in rubles; amounts inside parentheses are in dollars.]

	Under-Officers.		Remarks.	Laws.
	Privates.	With not less than 1 year's service.		
Pensions for degree of incapacity:				
I. Total incapacity requiring constant care of another person. <sup>1</sup>	216 (111, 15)	216+10% 168	216+20% 168+10% 108 (55, 55)	Law of June 25, 1912. Svod Zakonov Rossiskoi Imperii (Codified Laws of Russia), edited by Dobrovolskii, 1913, Vol. III, supplement 56, p. 2714ff.
II. Total incapacity not requiring constant care of another person. <sup>1</sup>	(86, 45)	168+10% 108	168+20% 108+10% 66 (33, 96)	Temporary Orders of Aug. 17 and Nov. 17, 1914. Reprinted in G. V. Soverin, Ramenye Ofizery i Nizhnie Chiny, Petrograd, 1914, pp. 158 and 166.
III. 70, 100 per cent loss of working power.	IV. 40, 70 per cent loss of working power.	V. 10, 40 per cent loss of working power.	66+10% 30 (15, 44)	Svod Voennih Postanovlenii (Military Code) 1869, Edition of 1902 and supplement of 1907
		Temporary relief in case of need given on application.	30+10% 10 to 25 (5, 15 to 12, 87)	
Assistance from Alexander Committee: <sup>2</sup>				
1. Wounded of first class <sup>3</sup> .....	240 (123.50)			
2. Wounded of second class <sup>3</sup> .....	120 (61.75)			

<sup>1</sup> Wounded of first class are soldiers requiring constant care by another person; of the second class those who have lost a limb or are incurably ill, but do not require care of another person.

<sup>2</sup> Alexander Committee, organized in 1814, constitutes part of the ministry of war.

<sup>3</sup> Noncurrent grants are also given by the committee.

Soldiers' disability pensions are paid at the district treasury offices three times a year in advance. At the recipient's request they may be paid at the township offices.

In addition to providing disability pensions the Government makes provision for temporary assistance in case of wounds or illness.<sup>1</sup> If the soldier is unable to continue service, he is given free railway and steamship transportation home, traveling expenses to a certain daily amount, and civilian clothing if he has none of his own. In case of serious injuries the soldier may be given temporary shelter at a special invalids' home and, if he needs them, artificial limbs at the Government's expense. Temporary relief in case of need may also be given on application to officers and soldiers under the temporary orders of August 17 and November 17, 1914. These grants range from 300 rubles (\$154.38) to 25 rubles (\$12.87) in the case of officers and in the case of soldiers from 25 rubles (\$12.87) to 10 rubles (\$5.15). Special funds are assigned for this purpose.

An order of July 15, 1916, provides disability pensions to a third group of persons, namely, skilled workers and common laborers in all Government workshops and railroads who become incapacitated in the course of their work, and as a result of enemy action. Temporary disability is compensated by one-half of the workman's wages; permanent total disability by two-thirds.

#### PENSIONS TO WIDOWS AND OTHER DEPENDENTS.

Survivors' pensions, according to the law of June 23, 1912,<sup>2</sup> are paid to the widow and children of officers dying of wounds, killed in battle, or missing. The widow receives in any case one-half of the pensionable salary; each child one-sixth. A widow and three or more children receive the full amount of the officer's salary. The pensionable salary—that is, the basis on which the pension is computed—consists of the salary proper, the table allowance, and the supplementary allowance (see Schedule 67, p. 203, for pay of officers). The sons are entitled to pensions up to the age of 17, the daughters up to the age of 21; or, in case of each, until entrance into school at Government expense or into the Government service; also until marriage, if this takes place before the age of 21, in case of daughters.

An important provision was made in the law of 1916, cited above, itself amending the law of June 16, 1905, on the care of children of soldiers killed in the war with Japan.<sup>3</sup> It applies to children of officers in the Army and Navy and to children of nonmilitary persons of officers' rank employed on steamers or serving in the medical,

<sup>1</sup> Svod Voennih Postanovlenii (Military Code), 1869, Bk. XIX, edition of 1910. Reprinted in G. V. Severin, Ranenye Ofizery i Nizhnie Chiny (Pensions to Officers and Soldiers), Petrograd, 1914, p. 110.

<sup>2</sup> See footnote 1 at bottom of p. 197.

<sup>3</sup> Sobranie Uzakonenii i Rasporiazhenii Pravitelstva, 1905, otd. 1, 20e polug., no. 1036, and otd. 1, 10e polug., no. 920.

veterinary, pharmaceutical, and other divisions of the Army or Navy. To each child up to the age of 6 years an annual pension of 75 rubles (\$38.60) is assigned; from 6 to 10 years, 125 rubles (\$64.33); and from 10 to 18 years, 300 to 450 rubles (\$154.38 to \$231.57). Up to the age of 10 years a child is entitled to this pension and also to one-sixth of the deceased officer's salary spoken of above. After that age only one of these pensions is given, at the choice of the mother or guardian.

The law also prescribes special measures for the placing of these children in educational institutions; upon admission traveling expenses are paid; at the time of graduation from high school, 150 rubles (\$77.20) are granted if the recipient does not enter a higher institution of learning. The pension may be extended until graduation from high school, but not after the age of 21.

Pensions to survivors of soldiers, as given in the law of June 25, 1912,<sup>1</sup> are much less generous. The widow receives from 84 rubles to 48 rubles (\$43.23 to \$24.70) a year according to her husband's rank and length of service. A full orphan receives one-half of the widow's pension up to the age of 17 years; two receive three-fourths; three or more receive the full amount.

The law of 1916, already cited, provides assistance for children of soldiers as well as officers. Each child up to the age of 16 receives annually 24 rubles (\$12.35), 30 rubles (\$15.44), or 42 rubles (\$21.61), according to the size of the city; an increase of not over 40 per cent may be granted to full orphans. At the time of entering school warm clothing, shoes, and school supplies are provided to the amount of 15 rubles (\$7.72). In especially deserving cases an educational assistance of from 50 rubles (\$25.73) to 150 rubles (\$77.19) annually may be granted.

---

<sup>1</sup> See footnote 3 on p. 196.

SCHEDULE 66.—Russia. *Pensions to widows and other dependents of soldiers or sailors killed in war, dying in consequence of injuries, or missing.*

ARMY AND NAVY.

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in rubles; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

	Noncommissioned officers.	Privates.	All other soldiers.	Remarks.	Laws.
	With 5 years' service beyond required term.	With 1 year's service beyond required term.	With not less than 5 years' service beyond required term.	Noncommissioned officers or privates.	
Pay (in peace) <sup>1</sup> .....	312 to 232 (160.56 to 129.68)	252 to 192 (129.68 to 98.80)	.....	.....	Law of June 25, 1912, Svod Zakonov Rossiistvo Imperii (Codified Laws, edited by Dobrovolskii, 1913, Vol. III, sup. 56, p. 274 II).
Pensions: Widow.....	84 (43.23)	60 (30.88)	60 (30.88)	48 (24.70)	Law passed about middle of 1916, reprinted in Pravo, no. 29, 1916, p. 1675.
Children— a. Each child up to 16 years. b. Full orphans under 16 years. <sup>2</sup>	24, 30, or 42 (12.35, 15.44, or 21.61) annually according to size of family. May receive increase of not more than 40 per cent on the above.				
Alternative to b, c. Full orphans under 17 years. <sup>2</sup>					
1. II.1 only.....	42 (21.61)	30 (15.44)	30 (15.44)	24 (12.35)	Temporary orders, Aug. 17 and Nov. 17, 1914, G. V. Severin, Ranenye Ofitsery i N-func Chity (Pensions to Officers and Soldiers), Petrograd, 1914, pp. 158, 166.
2. II.2.....	63 (32.42)	45 (23.16)	45 (23.16)	36 (18.53)	
2. II.3 or more.....	84 (43.23)	60 (30.88)	60 (30.88)	48 (24.70)	
Temporary allowance in case of need, family.	10 (5.15) to 25 (12.87)				
Assistance from Alexander Committee, <sup>3</sup> widow and children; in their absence, parents.	Annual grants 120 (61.75) to 240 (123.50) in case of poverty, sickness, or accidents. Single grants.				

<sup>1</sup> Figures for October, 1913. Veltze's Internationaler Armeec-Almanach, 1913-14.

<sup>2</sup> Pensions given to children under laws of 1912 and 1916 are not granted simultaneously; the more advantageous pension is accorded.

<sup>3</sup> The Alexander Committee, organized in 1814, constitutes part of the ministry of war.

## SCHEDULE 67.—Russia. Military pay table.

[Source: Veltzé's Internationaler Armee-Almanach, 1913-14.]

[Amounts outside of parentheses are in rubles; amounts inside of parentheses are in dollars.]

Grade.	Annual salary.	First class.			Eighth class.			Mobilization allowances.			
		Rent.	Stall.	Light and fuel.	Rent.	Stall.	Light and fuel.	Additional allowance.	Lump sum.		Regular mobilization allowance.
									To bachelor.	To married officer.	
Full general.....	2,100 (1,080.66)	1,692 (870.70)	138 (71.01)	500 (257.30)	534 (274.80)	42 (21.61)	125 (64.33)	350 (180.11)	700 (360.22)	250 (128.65)	10 (5.15)
Lieutenant general.....	1,800 (926.28)	1,512 (778.08)	102 (52.49)	444 (192.98)	444 (228.48)	30 (15.44)	100 (56.61)	300 (154.38)	600 (308.76)	250 (128.65)	5 (2.57)
Major general.....	1,500 (771.90)	1,332 (685.45)	84 (43.23)	250 (128.65)	426 (219.22)	24 (12.35)	75 (38.60)	250 (128.65)	500 (257.30)	250 (128.65)	4 (2.06)
Colonel.....	1,200 (617.32)	906 (466.23)	84 (43.23)	200 (102.92)	306 (157.47)	24 (12.35)	62.5 (32.16)	480 (247.01)	200 (102.92)	400 (205.84)	150 (77.19)
Lieutenant colonel.....	1,080 (565.77)	594 (305.67)	36 (18.53)	198 (101.89)	198 (101.89)	12 (6.18)	37.5 (19.30)	180 (247.01)	150 (92.63)	150 (86.26)	2 or 1.5 (1.03)
Captain.....	900 (463.14)	426 (219.22)	18 (9.26)	100 (51.46)	132 (67.93)	6 (3.08)	25 (12.87)	360 (185.26)	300 (77.19)	300 (154.38)	1 (.51)
“Stabs” captain.....	780 (401.39)	246 (126.59)	62.5 (32.16)	62.5 (32.16)	102 (52.49)	102 (52.49)	17.5 (9.01)	300 (154.38)	130 (66.90)	260 (133.80)	100 (51.46)
Lieutenant.....	720 (370.51)	246 (126.59)	62.5 (32.16)	62.5 (32.16)	102 (52.49)	102 (52.49)	17.5 (9.01)	240 (123.50)	120 (61.75)	240 (123.50)	75 (39.46)
Second lieutenant.....	660 (339.64)	246 (126.59)	62.5 (32.16)	62.5 (32.16)	102 (52.49)	102 (52.49)	17.5 (9.01)	180 (122.63)	110 (56.61)	220 (113.21)	50 (25.73)
Ensign.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....
Nonmilitary employee of army of ensign's rank.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....	.....

TABLE MONEY.

Corps commandant.....	5,700	(2,933.22)
Division commandant.....	4,200	(2,161.32)
Brigadier commandant.....	2,700	(1,389.42)
Regiment commandant.....	2,700	(1,389.42)
Battalion commandant.....	660	(339.64)
Company commandant.....	360	(185.26)

NOTE 1.—Officers in command of an army unit receive 2 or  $1\frac{1}{2}$  times the amounts given above.

NOTE 2.—For purpose of computing pension, salary equals salary proper plus table allowance plus supplementary allowance.

The temporary orders of August 17 and November 17, 1914, provide for grants in case of need to officers' and soldiers' families. The amounts vary from 300 rubles (\$154.38) to 25 rubles (\$12.87) in the case of families of officers, and from 25 rubles (\$12.87) to 10 rubles (\$5.15) for families of soldiers.

Survivors' pensions are also paid to families of employees in all Government workshops and on railroads, irrespective of age or sex, who lost their lives as a result of enemy action. A funeral benefit is paid, 30 rubles (\$15.44) for an adult and 15 rubles (\$7.72) for a child. The widow receives one-third of her husband's annual wages for life; each child up to the age of 15 receives one-sixth, a full orphan one-fourth. (Order of July 15, 1916.)

Allowances and pensions to dependents of officers and soldiers are given to legitimate families only. The question of extending the benefits of the law to illegitimate children and their mothers was discussed in legislative circles; the superior council organized for the relief of soldiers' families in its meeting of November 13, 1914, went on record against such an extension, saying that the "enacting of a law which would grant the same allowance to an illegitimate family would not contribute to the stability of the foundation of the legitimate family and would undoubtedly influence adversely popular conception of the holiness of marital union."<sup>1</sup> On account of lack of sources it is impossible to state whether any action has been taken toward an inclusion of illegitimates in the system of military pensions and allowances.

The law of July 15, 1916, however, which provides pensions for nonmilitary employees of Government workshops and railroads, includes illegitimate families.

#### ADMINISTRATION.

The procedure connected with the administration of the allowance and pension laws was complicated and very slow. For this reason, on September 26, 1914, new regulations were issued abolishing some of the formalities of the administration of the officers' allowances and pensions, and securing in this way a more speedy grant and payment.

Similar steps in the direction of efficient administration of soldiers' allowances and pensions were taken about a year later. On July 21, 1915, the minister of the interior issued a circular to all governors of provinces asking them to take the "most effective measures for the immediate payment of the allowances to soldiers, and not to delay such payments on account of lack of the necessary documents, but, on the contrary, to try to obtain the missing documents as quickly as possible from the civil and military authorities concerned."<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup>Izvestia Verhovnago Sovieta po prizrienu semei litz prizvannih na voinu, January, 1915, p. 18.

<sup>2</sup>Ibidem, July-September, 1915, p. 296.

## OFFICIAL COMMITTEES.

In addition to the pensions definitely prescribed by law, assistance is also given on application by the Alexander Committee for the Care of the Wounded. This committee is a permanent body organized in 1814, and at present a part of the ministry of war. The relief it distributes comes chiefly from the invalidity fund, raised in part by deductions from the officers' salaries. The committee gives financial assistance in the form of either single grants or regular pensions; it also places invalids in asylums or homes and assists in the education of children. The annual pensions vary according to rank and degree of disability; a general, for instance, or his family in case of his death, may receive from 1,716 rubles (\$883.05) to 1,143 rubles (\$588.19); a colonel from 510 rubles (\$262.45) to 305 rubles (\$156.95); a second lieutenant from 360 rubles (\$185.26) to 210 rubles (\$108.07); a soldier 240 rubles (\$123.50) to 120 rubles (\$61.75).

The definite legal provisions for orphans are supplemented by assistance from the Romanov Committee. This committee was established by a law of June 29, 1914, for the purpose of giving financial aid to orphan asylums. On September 1, 1914, however, a ministerial decree was issued directing the committee to assist in the care of children of soldiers and sailors called to war service. According to its report the committee spent from the latter part of 1914 to April 30, 1915, 971,535 rubles (\$499,951) on assistance to child-caring agencies. The funds are derived partly from the treasury and partly from private contributions.

The activity of the various organizations, both public and private, for the care of soldiers' and officers' families is coordinated and supervised by the supreme council for the care of families of war participants, established by an imperial order of August 11, 1914. The supreme council has in its possession funds from private and public sources which it distributes among the various organizations.

## REFERENCES.

Sobranie Uzakonenii i Rasporiajenii Pravitelstva (Collection of Current Laws and Orders), St. Petersburg, 1912.

Severin, G. V.: Ranenyye Ofitzery i Nizhnie Chiny (Pensions to officers and soldiers), Petrograd, 1914.

Svod Voennih Postanovlenii (Military Code), 1869, book XIX, edition of 1902, supplement of 1907, edition of 1910.

Izvestia Verhovnago Sovieta po prizrieniu semei litz prizvannih na voinu, January, July-September, 1915, Petrograd.

Pravo, Petrograd weekly paper.

Veltzé's Internationaler Armee-Almanach. Ch. Belser, Stuttgart, 1913-1914.

Svod Žakonov Rossiiskoi Imperii (Codified Laws of Russia), unofficial edition by Dobrovolskii, St. Petersburg, 1913.

Malinko, V., Spravochnaiia Knizhka dlia Ofitzerov (officers' reference book), Moscow, 1915.

## SWITZERLAND.<sup>1</sup>

### MILITARY INSURANCE.

According to the Swiss constitution of 1874 and subsequent legislation for military organization, all citizens between the ages of 20 and 48 meeting the legal requirements are subject to military service.<sup>2</sup> Those exempted from personal service pay an exemption tax, fixed by the law of June 28, 1878.<sup>3</sup>

In the matter of pensions,<sup>4</sup> the "Organization Militaire" of 1850 provided that soldiers wounded or mutilated in the Federal service, or their dependent relatives if they lost their lives, should in case of need receive an indemnity for assistance "suitable to their state of fortune."<sup>5</sup> The law of 1852, intended to carry out this provision, granted an allowance to men wounded while meeting the enemy or disabled through the special fatigues or dangers of the service, in case the earning power necessary to their support was reduced, and it fixed the maximum indemnity at 500 francs (\$96.50) annually. The dependent relatives of soldiers killed under the same circumstances received a maximum of 300 francs (\$57.90). The constitution of 1874 took a step forward in the matter of government responsibility, by asserting that needy soldiers permanently disabled through military service, and their families when in need, had a right to government aid, and the pension law of that year extended the provisions of the old law to soldiers injured in time of peace on the same terms as those injured in time of war. It also raised the maximum annual amounts to 1,200 francs (\$231.60) for permanent disability, 650 francs (\$125.45) for widows with children, and 330 francs (\$62.55) for widows without children.

In 1887 the Government tried the experiment of contracting with a private insurance company (*la société anonyme pour les assurances*

<sup>1</sup> The Swiss material was prepared by Miss Louise F. Brown and Miss Edith Rockwell Hall.

<sup>2</sup> Federal Constitution, 1874; Organization Militaire de la Confédération Suisse, 1907, Feuille Fédérale 1907, II, p. 725.

<sup>3</sup> A personal tax of 6 francs (\$1.16); a supplementary tax (a) 1 franc 50 centimes (29 cents) for each 1,000 francs (\$193) net fortune. (b) 1 franc 50 centimes (29 cents) for each 100 francs (\$19.30) net income. Fortunes less than 1,000 francs (\$193) are not taxed, and an allowance of 600 francs (\$115.80) is made on incomes before subjecting them to taxation. Those who have served at least eight years and have become incapacitated for further service pay only one-half their tax, unless it is remitted entirely; and from the age of 32 to 44 years also men are liable for only the half rate.

The Federal Assembly has the right to double this tax in years when the greater part of the troops are called out, and in the present crisis this was done by the decree of Dec. 23, 1914. (Recueil Officiel No. 3, 1877-78, p. 532; Recueil Officiel No. 30, 1914, p. 678.)

<sup>4</sup> An account of the history of Swiss military pensions is to be found in the Message of the Federal Council to the Federal Assembly, Dec. 12, 1912, Feuille Fédérale, 1912, V, p. 151.

<sup>5</sup> Feuille Fédérale, 1912, V, p. 152.

de transports et contre les accidents "la Zurich") for the insurance of its soldiers. The indemnity to be paid in case of death or total invalidity amounted to 10,000 francs (\$1,930) for officers, and to 3,000 francs (\$579) for noncommissioned officers and privates. In case of total incapacity for work the company paid, for the cost of treatment and loss of earnings, 10 francs (\$1.93) a day during the illness for officers, and 3 francs (\$0.58) a day for noncommissioned officers and privates; in case of partial incapacity for work the company paid half benefits. These indemnities were allowed from the day after release from the army to the end of the term of the physician's services, not, however, to exceed 200 days from the accident. In 1893 there was an attempt to correct the disproportion between the sums paid to officers and to soldiers by reducing the total invalidity or death insurance for officers to 5,000 francs (\$965) and their disability indemnity to 5 francs (96½ cents). But in spite of this modification the system proved unsatisfactory, partly because of legal difficulties in its administration, partly because the sums provided were insufficient, and in general because the feeling was growing that the pension ought to be measured by the soldier's loss of earning capacity rather than by his "state of fortune." Other attempts to arrive at a satisfactory system were made in 1898, 1901, 1906. The first of these was the law establishing the system of civil insurance, in which it was proposed to include provisions for military insurance also. The proposal was rejected by referendum in 1900, and the legislation failed likewise to supply a satisfactory system. Under pressure of the present war emergencies the matter of pensions has been the subject of entirely new legislation in the law of December 23, 1914.<sup>1</sup> This plan, the provisions of which are analyzed in the annexed schedule, follows closely the lines of the Swiss civil insurance.<sup>2</sup> While the administration of the two systems is kept distinct, a close cooperation has been established between the military and civil accident services, and the use of the same tribunal for the two systems has been adopted.<sup>3</sup>

The military insurance thus established is administered by the Swiss military department through its chief medical officer, who is provided with the necessary staff and has the cooperation of the technical experts of the Government.<sup>4</sup> A pension committee of seven members, appointed for three years by the Federal Council, decides on the amounts and conditions of the pensions and capital indemnities, in consultation with the chief medical officer. Appeals from the decisions of the pension committee or of the chief medical

<sup>1</sup> *Feuille Fédérale*, 1915, I, p. 45.

<sup>2</sup> See p. 210.

<sup>3</sup> Federal act respecting military insurance, Dec. 23, 1914, art. 55. Bulletin of International Labor Office (English edition), Vol. X, p. 33.

<sup>4</sup> Article 62.

officer are brought before the Federal insurance court. The Federal Council issues the regulations for the administration of the insurance. The Federal Assembly decides on the mode of covering pensions in case of war or other public calamity, and appropriates funds for the system.

SCHEDULE 68.—*Switzerland. Military insurance.*

[Table based on Federal act respecting military insurance, Dec. 23, 1914. *Feuille Fédérale*, 1915, I, p. 45. English translation in *Bulletin of the International Labor Office*, 1915, Vol. X, p. 23.]

A. FORM OF INSURANCE AND CLASSES INSURED.

Form of insurance.	Classes insured.
Against sickness and accidents: (a) Sickness and accidents during service or exercise of military functions. (b) Sickness and accidents going on duty or returning home. (c) Sickness due to injurious influences during above period. <sup>1</sup>	1. Soldiers of all ranks while on service. 2. Officers on special service with foreign armies. Divisional controllers of arms and their substitutes and assistants during the exercise of their military functions. The sanitary staff of the Swiss societies for assisting the wounded, organized and placed under military authority, while on active service. The members of the voluntary corps of motorists while on service.
Against sickness and accidents..... Between the taking up of command and its resignation or the expiration of any functions connected with it.	3. Commanders of units of the Army.
Against sickness and accidents..... Between beginning and termination of engagements.	4. Instructors. Officials, guards, and other permanent employees in fortifications. Permanent employees and auxiliary staff of Cavalry remount depot and of those connected with the horse department. Permanent attendants at Federal military hospitals.
Against accidents..... During the exercise of their functions.	5. District commanders, sectional chiefs, and other functionaries during recruiting and inspections. Officers, instructors, gymnastic experts, and secretaries officially attached to recruiting operations. Experts for valuing horses. Officers giving shooting instruction and members of shooting committees. Officers' servants.
Against accidents..... While going through their exercises.	The assistant staff who attend to targets and other implements of instruction. Persons engaged by a corps of troops on behalf of the National Government. 6. The military members of rifle clubs. Persons taking part in preparatory military instruction. Persons employed as markers in connection with rifle clubs and preparatory military instruction. Young men called up for examination as recruits.

<sup>1</sup> Sickness must be verified by a certified physician and reported within 3 weeks. If not so reported, it will be considered only under special conditions.

SCHEDULE 68.—*Switzerland. Military insurance—Continued.*

## B. BENEFITS.

Benefits.	Basis of computation.	Amount.
Hospital treatment <sup>1</sup> . Wages continued for duration of service (Class 1 only).	Rank or school pay.	Full pay.
Daily unemployment allowance during temporary disability: First 30 days of sickness— a. For Class 1 (30 days following service). b. For other classes.		a. 3 francs. b. Rate for each class fixed by Federal Council.
After 30 days (all classes).	Daily earnings up to 8 francs (\$1.54) computed on $\frac{1}{3}$ annual wage, or $\frac{1}{6}$ monthly wage, or $\frac{1}{2}$ weekly wage. <sup>3</sup>	Total disability, <sup>2</sup> 80 per cent; partial disability, in proportion.
Pensions for permanent disability <sup>4</sup> .	Annual earnings based on daily earnings computed as above, multiplied by 360. <sup>5</sup>	Total disability, 70 per cent; partial disability, in proportion.
Pensions for dependents, in case of death: a. Wife— 1. Widow, <sup>6</sup> or divorced or legally separated wife entitled to full maintenance. <sup>7</sup> 2. Divorced or legally separated wife entitled to partial maintenance. <sup>7</sup> b. Children under 18 <sup>8</sup> — 1. Each child, if widow or divorced wife is living. <sup>7</sup> 2. Each child, if widow or divorced wife is dead. c. Parents wholly or partly dependent, if no claims as above. d. Grandparents, if parents receive no pension, or brothers and sisters, if no claims as above.	Annual earnings of deceased, based on daily earnings, computed as above, multiplied by 360.	40 per cent. In proportion to husband's obligation. 15 per cent. 25 per cent. 20 per cent for one; 35 per cent for both. Not to exceed 15 per cent for one or 25 per cent for several.
Funeral expenses.		Up to 40 francs (\$7.72).

<sup>1</sup> This includes free maintenance and treatment at the hospital appointed, with expenses of conveyance to hospital. If home treatment is authorized or ordered, an allowance of 2 francs 50 centimes (48 cents) a day is made. A suitable increase is granted when expenses greatly exceed this allowance (arts. 21-22).

<sup>2</sup> In case of destitution, the allowance may with the consent of the Federal Council be increased to the full amount of the daily earnings, for a definite or indefinite period (art. 26). In case of a person without dependents, the allowance is reduced one-half during hospital or home treatment (art. 29).

<sup>3</sup> When earnings vary, the average wage is taken. Apprentices, students, etc., have their wages assumed to be 3 francs (55 cents) a day. Earnings chiefly or wholly in kind are computed according to the usual wage of the district for similar work, but at not less than 4 francs (77 cents) except for apprentices, etc. Regular supplementary earnings and revenue from investments are taken into account only if they cease or diminish as a result of the illness or accident (art. 25).

<sup>4</sup> Granted for permanent invalidity or serious ill health affecting capacity for work; for life or for a definite period. In the latter case it can be extended or changed to a pension for life. A disability pension is replaced by a lump sum if the person seems likely to recover his ability to work by resuming his occupation. The amount is based on the probable extent of his loss of earnings (arts. 34, 38). Pensions can be doubled by the Federal Council if the person was disabled or killed while voluntarily exposing himself to great risk for his country (art. 49).

<sup>5</sup> For minors, computed on the scale of an adult, but not to exceed the earnings of a person 30 years old (art. 35). In case of destitution it can be increased. (*Ibid.*) All pensions may be reassessed at any time (art. 36).

<sup>6</sup> A widow on remarrying receives a settlement of three times the annual amount (art. 42).

<sup>7</sup> In case of concurrent claims of widow and divorced wife, total pensions not to exceed 50 per cent. In case of children's claims, in addition, total not to exceed 65 per cent.

<sup>8</sup> Including adopted and illegitimate children and illegitimate children whose paternity has been legally acknowledged (art. 43). Pension to cease at 18 except in case of disabling infirmity (art. 43).

The National Government bears all the expenses of the military insurance, except when the persons insured have been called into service exclusively in the interest of a particular canton or locality, in which case the Government can recover the cost of the insurance

from the canton.<sup>1</sup> The Federal Assembly provides, in the annual budget, for the expenses of administration and for the payment of benefits. Appropriations to an invalidity fund which can only be used for benefits in case of war, are made annually to the amount of 500,000 francs (\$96,500) at least. When this fund shall have reached the sum of 50,000,000 francs (\$9,650,000) the Federal Assembly is to decide whether it is advisable to continue payments. Two other funds are available for the payment of insurance benefits only in time of war. These funds are named the Grenus invalids fund and the Federal Winkelried foundation fund.<sup>2</sup>

When a person entitled to military insurance has been compulsorily insured with the Swiss national accident insurance fund, this civil insurance is suspended. However, if when he enters military service he is suffering from the consequence of an accident or disease against which he had been insured, and the military service aggravates his condition, the civil and military insurance jointly bear the cost. The military insurance department pays the benefit, and is partly repaid by the civil insurance fund in proportion to the extent to which the military service has aggravated his condition. The payments of benefit for temporary disability are made by the military insurance department in conformity with the provisions of the military insurance act, and repaid by the civil insurance fund in the proportion agreed upon. The benefits for permanent disability are paid by each company, the shares being determined in the same way. In the case of persons voluntarily insured in the civil fund, the relations of the two insurances are fixed by regulations of the Federal Assembly.<sup>3</sup>

#### CIVIL INSURANCE.<sup>4</sup>

The Swiss sickness and accident insurance law was enacted on the 13th of June, 1911, by the Federal Council, and accepted by referendum on the 4th of February, 1912.

The National Government encourages sickness insurance by granting subsidies to sick insurance funds which are legally recognized. If the cantons or communes make such insurance compulsory, and if they assume the responsibility for the payment of all or a part of the premiums of indigent insured persons, the National Government grants subsidies equal to one-third of their disbursements. While employers can not be made to contribute to the payments made by their employees who are compulsorily insured, they may be made to take charge of the payments to be made by their employees.<sup>5</sup> Sick

<sup>1</sup> Articles 51, 52, 55, 62, 63.

<sup>2</sup> Articles 61, 65.

<sup>3</sup> Articles 56 to 60.

<sup>4</sup> The information in this section may be found in the text of the law, *Feuille Fédérale*, 1911, III, p. S15. An English translation is to be found in *Bulletin of the U. S. Bureau of Labor Statistics*, No. 103, Aug. 1, 1912, p. 7.

<sup>5</sup> Sickness and accident insurance law, June 13, 1911, articles 1, 2.

benefits include medical care and medicines and daily indemnity for loss of time of not less than 1 franc (19.3 cents). Benefits must be provided for at least 180 days each year, and special provision is made for women during confinement.<sup>1</sup>

Accident insurance is administered by the national accident insurance fund. Each canton is entitled to an agency of this fund, which conducts insurance on the mutual plan. Its central office is in Lucerne. The National Government granted this fund a working capital of 5,000,000 francs (\$965,000) and the same amount to create a reserve fund. It pays one-half the expenses of administration.<sup>2</sup>

Accident insurance is compulsory for laborers and other employees working in transportation and postal service; establishments subject to the factory law; building trades; engineering works; telegraph and telephone construction and maintenance; mines, quarries, and gravel banks; industries which produce or use explosives.<sup>3</sup>

The risks insured against are occupational and nonoccupational. Occupational diseases are classified as accidents.<sup>4</sup> Different employments are classified according to their risks, and the premium rates are fixed by the officers of the national fund. For occupational accidents they are paid entirely by the employer. For nonoccupational accidents they are paid as follows: Three-fourths by insured person, one-fourth by the National Government; the employer collects the premiums from his employees.<sup>5</sup> Any person not subject to compulsory insurance may be insured voluntarily, on conditions fixed by the National Government.<sup>6</sup>

SCHEDULE 69.—*Switzerland. Civil insurance benefits for accidents.*

Beneficiaries.	Disability or death.	Benefits.	
		Kind.	Amount.
Insured workers.....	Any disability.....	Medical attendance and medicines.	
	Temporary disability.	Indemnity for lost time.	80 per cent of daily earnings, maximum, 14 francs (\$2.70).
	Permanent disability:		
	Total.....	Annuity.....	70 per cent annual earnings.
	Partial.....	...do.....	In proportion to disability. <sup>7</sup>
	Death of insured person.	Funeral expenses....	Minimum, 40 francs (\$7.72). (Percentages of annual earnings: 1. 30 per cent. 2a. 15 per cent. 2b. 25 per cent. 3. 20 per cent. Total maximum 60 per cent.)
Dependent relatives.....		Annuity.....	
1. Widow or disabled widower			
2. Each child under 16:			
(a) If mother is living....			
(b) If mother is dead....			
3. Grandparents; brothers and sisters under 16.			

<sup>1</sup> Articles 12, 13, 14.

<sup>2</sup> Articles 41, 46, 51.

<sup>3</sup> Article 60.

<sup>4</sup> Articles 67, 68.

<sup>5</sup> Articles 102 to 110, 118, 119.

<sup>6</sup> Articles 118, 119.

<sup>7</sup> No earnings beyond 4,000 francs (\$772) are considered (art. 78).



# APPENDIXES: PENSIONS IN THE UNITED STATES.<sup>1</sup>

*Abbreviations.*—C. S., Compiled Statutes of the United States, 1916; M. L., Military Laws of the United States, 1917; R. S., Revised Statutes of the United States, 1873; Stat. L., United States Statutes at Large.

## APPENDIX A.—PRESENT PENSION PROVISIONS FOR MEN DISABLED IN SERVICE AND FOR WIDOWS AND OTHER DEPENDENTS OF MEN KILLED OR DYING IN SERVICE.

### MEN.

Beneficiaries.	Service.	Age or other reason.	Amount.
Officers and men, including regulars, volunteers, and militia. <sup>2</sup> Surgeons. C. S., 8933, 8934.	Military or Naval Service of the United States.	Disabled from wound, injury, or disease, incurred or contracted in line of duty. C. S., 8933-8942.	According to extent of disability: 1. Disability equivalent to ankylosis of wrist, rate varies with rank from \$8 monthly for privates to \$30 monthly for lieutenant colonel, etc. (See Appendix D.) C. S., 8944. 2. Permanent specific disability, rates fixed by law and varying, without regard to rank, from \$24 to \$100 monthly. The rate for incapacity to perform manual labor is fixed at \$30 a month. (See Appendix B.) C. S., 8947-8962, 8968. 3. Other disabilities, rates fixed by Commissioner of Pensions and varying from \$6 monthly to \$27 monthly. (See Appendix C.) C. S., 8962, 8974, 9072.

### WIDOWS AND CHILDREN.

Beneficiaries.	Service of deceased.	Cause of death.	Date of marriage.	Age.	Amount.
Widows <sup>3</sup> of officers and men, including volunteers and militia. <sup>4</sup> C. S., 8977.	Military or Naval Service of the United States since 1861.	Wound, injury, or disease incurred in line of duty. <sup>5</sup>	Prior to Mar. 3, 1899, or later, if before or during the service of husband. <sup>6</sup>	.....	According to rank of deceased; minimum is \$12 monthly and maximum is \$30 monthly. C. S., 8977, 8980.
	Any service of the United States in the Civil War.	Wound, injury, or disease incurred in line of duty.	.....	70.....	\$20 minimum. C. S., 8981a.
	.....do.....	.....do.....	Prior to close of Civil War service.	.....	\$20 minimum. C. S., 8981a.

<sup>1</sup> The legislative material has been compiled by Miss Anna Rochester and Miss Lulu L. Eckman, and the statistical material by Miss Louise Moore and Mrs. Marie Francke Smith. Appendixes B, C, and D have been adapted from tables in Laws of the United States Governing the Granting of Army and Navy Pensions, together with Regulations Relating Thereto, published by Bureau of Pensions, United States Department of the Interior, 1916.

<sup>2</sup> The Coast Guard is not eligible for pensions. (C. S., 8459½a (3).) Officers in Regular Army, Navy, and Marine Corps receive retirement pay and while on retired list are not eligible for pensions.

<sup>3</sup> Pension is payable until remarriage, but if widow of a man who served in Civil War has remarried and again becomes a widow, or if a woman who was the wife of the man during his active service in any war has remarried and has again become a widow and is without means of support, she is entitled to a pension. If, however, pension has during remarriage been paid to children it returns to the widow only if they are members of her family and cared for by her. (C. S., 8981b, 8993.)

<sup>4</sup> The law does not require evidence of marriage from widow of colored or Indian soldier who was habitually recognized as wife in claims on behalf of persons who enlisted before Mar. 3, 1873. (C. S., 8988.)

<sup>5</sup> Double pension is allowed for death from accident or disease incurred by men in Navy or Marine Corps, in connection with a aviation duty. (C. S., 2952½.)

<sup>6</sup> No limitation as to date if wife has lived and cohabited with the deceased continuously from date of marriage to date of death. This limitation expressly does not apply to widows of men serving in Spanish War. (Act of Mar. 3, 1899; C. S., 8980.)

APPENDIX A.—PRESENT PENSION PROVISIONS FOR MEN DISABLED IN SERVICE AND FOR WIDOWS AND OTHER DEPENDENTS OF MEN KILLED OR DYING IN SERVICE—Continued.

WIDOWS AND CHILDREN—Continued.

Beneficiaries.	Service of deceased.	Cause of death.	Date of marriage.	Age.	Amount.
Child or children <sup>1</sup> of deceased officer or soldier: 1. If mother is widow. <sup>2</sup> 2. If there is no widow, or she has remarried, or she has been deemed improper person <sup>3</sup> to care for child. C. S., 8979, 8990.	Military or Naval <sup>4</sup> Service of the United States.	Wound, injury, or disease incurred in line of duty. <sup>5</sup>	-----	Under 16; or over 16 if insane, idiotic, or otherwise permanently helpless, provided child was under 16 at time of father's death. C. S., 8982.	1. \$2 monthly for each child. <sup>6</sup> 2. According to rank of father: Minimum \$12, maximum \$30; and in addition \$2 monthly for each child. C. S., 8977, 8979, 8980, 8983.

OTHER DEPENDENTS.

Beneficiaries.	Service of deceased.	Cause of death.	Amount.
If there is no widow nor legitimate child, other relatives who were dependent upon the deceased <sup>7</sup> are entitled to pension in the following order: 1. Mother. <sup>8</sup> 2. Father. 3. Orphan brothers and sisters <sup>9</sup> under 16 years of age. C. S., 8991, 8992.	Any Military or Naval Service of the United States, since Mar. 4, 1861.	Injury or disease incurred in line of duty. <sup>6</sup>	Pay according to rank of deceased: Minimum \$12 monthly, maximum \$30 monthly. C. S., 8980.

<sup>1</sup> Child is deemed legitimate who is born before the marriage of its parents, if it is acknowledged by father before or after marriage. But compare footnote 4 on page 213. (C. S., 8987.)

<sup>2</sup> It is expressly stipulated that increase of pension on behalf of minor child shall not be withdrawn because the child is maintained in whole or in part by the State or the public in an institution. (C. S., 8979.)

<sup>3</sup> Pension returns to mother who has been deemed improper person to care for the child when the child ceases to receive it.

<sup>4</sup> The Coast Guard is not eligible for pensions. (C. S., 84591a (3).) Officers in Regular Army, Navy, and Marine Corps receive retirement pay and while on retired list are not eligible for pensions.

<sup>5</sup> Double pension is allowed for death from accident or disease incurred by men in Navy or Marine Corps, in connection with aviation duty. (C. S., 2952 $\frac{1}{2}$ .)

<sup>6</sup> This supplementary allowance is paid to the mother if she is herself receiving pension and the children are her children by the soldier. But if the widow is a stepmother and is not charged with the child, the supplementary allowance is paid not to the widow but to the guardian. (C. S., 8979.)

<sup>7</sup> Dependency of parents defined as follows: "Without other present means of support than their own manual labor or the contributions of others not legally bound for their support." (C. S., 8992.)

<sup>8</sup> Pension is allowed until remarriage of mother.

<sup>9</sup> Pension to orphan sister ceases on her marriage if this occurs before she is 16 years old. (C. S., 8993.)

The following are eligible for admission to the Soldiers' Home: (1) Every soldier of the United States Army who has served 20 years; (2) those of the Regular or Volunteer service who have been wounded or diseased in the service and in line of duty; (3) those who through service in any war have been rendered invalid or disabled. (C. S., 9225.)

Disabled and decrepit Navy officers, seamen, and marines are admitted to the Naval Home at Philadelphia. (C. S., 9203.) Enlisted men received at the Naval Home are not eligible to the special allowance for disability after 10 or 20 years of service shown in Appendix F.

## APPENDIX B.—MONTHLY PENSION RATES FIXED BY LAW FOR PERMANENT SPECIFIC DISABILITIES.

Disabilities.	From July 4, 1861 (13 Stat., L., 387).	From Mar. 3, 1865 (13 Stat., L., 499).	From June 6, 1866 (14 Stat., L., 335).	From June 4, 1872 (17 Stat., L., 56).	From Feb. 28, 1877 (C. S., 8954).	From June 17, 1878 (C. S., 8955).	From Mar. 3, 1879 (C. S., 8951).	From Mar. 3, 1883 (20 Stat., L., 484).	From Mar. 3, 1886 (C. S., 8959).	From Mar. 4, 1886 (C. S., 8960).	From Aug. 4, 1886 (C. S., 8962).	From Aug. 27, 1889 (C. S., 8963).	From July 14, 1892 (C. S., 8965).	From Jan. 15, 1893 (C. S., 8961).	From Mar. 2, 1903 (C. S., 8963).	From Apr. 8, 1904 (C. S., 8965).	
Loss of both hands.	\$25.00				\$31.25	\$50.00	\$72.00										
Loss of both feet.	20.00				31.25	50.00	72.00										
Loss of sight of both eyes.	25.00				31.25	50.00	72.00										
Loss of sight of 1 eye, the sight of the other having been lost before enlistment.																	
Loss of 1 hand and 1 foot.																	
Loss of hand or foot.																	
Loss of an arm at or above the elbow or a leg at or above the knee.																	
Loss of either leg at the hip joint or an arm at the shoulder joint, or so near as to prevent the use of an artificial limb.																	
Loss of leg at hip joint.																	
Loss of an arm at shoulder joint.																	
Total disability in both hands.																	
Total disability in both feet.																	
Total disability in 1 hand and 1 foot.																	
Total disability in 1 hand or 1 foot.																	
Disability equivalent to the loss of a hand or a foot (third grade).																	
Disability equivalent to the loss of a hand or a foot (first grade).																	
Total disability in arm or leg.																	
Incapacity to perform manual labor (second grade).																	

<sup>1</sup> The law supplies men with artificial limbs, providing a new limb or the cash value thereof every 3 years at the following rates: Artificial leg, \$75; artificial arm, \$50; artificial foot, \$50; apparatus for resection, \$50. (C. S., 9120-9126.)

**APPENDIX B.—MONTHLY PENSION RATES FIXED BY LAW FOR PERMANENT SPECIFIC DISABILITIES—Continued.**

<sup>1</sup> \$72 from June 17, 1878, by act of June 16, 1880, only where the rate was \$50 under act of June 18, 1874, and granted prior to June 16, 1880. First grade proper continued at \$50 until amended by act Mar. 4, 1890, which increased rate to \$72.

APPENDIX C.—MONTHLY PENSION RATES FIXED BY ADMINISTRATIVE RULINGS FOR CERTAIN DISABILITIES NOT SPECIFIED BY LAW.<sup>1</sup>

	Per month.
Ankylosis of shoulder.....	\$12.00
Ankylosis of elbow.....	10.00
Ankylosis of knee.....	10.00
Ankylosis of ankle.....	8.00
Ankylosis of wrist.....	8.00
Loss of sight of one eye.....	12.00
Loss of one eye.....	17.00
Nearly total deafness of one ear.....	6.00
Total deafness of one ear.....	10.00
Slight deafness of both ears.....	6.00
Severe deafness of one ear and slight of the other.....	10.00
Nearly total deafness of one ear and slight of the other.....	15.00
Total deafness of one ear and slight of the other.....	20.00
Severe deafness of both ears.....	22.00
Total deafness of one ear and severe of the other.....	25.00
Deafness of both ears existing in a degree nearly total.....	27.00
Loss of palm of hand, and all the fingers, the thumb remaining.....	17.00
Loss of thumb, index, middle, and ring fingers.....	17.00
Loss of thumb, index, and middle fingers.....	16.00
Loss of thumb and index finger.....	12.00
Loss of thumb and little finger.....	10.00
Loss of thumb, index, and little fingers.....	16.00
Loss of thumb.....	8.00
Loss of thumb and metacarpal bone.....	12.00
Loss of all the fingers, thumb and palm remaining.....	16.00
Loss of index, middle, and ring fingers.....	16.00
Loss of middle, ring, and little fingers.....	14.00
Loss of index and middle fingers.....	8.00
Loss of little and middle fingers.....	8.00
Loss of little and ring fingers.....	6.00
Loss of ring and middle fingers.....	6.00
Loss of index finger.....	4.00
Loss of any other finger without complications.....	2.00
Loss of all the toes of one foot.....	10.00
Loss of great, second, and third toes.....	8.00
Loss of great toe and metatarsal.....	8.00
Loss of great and second toes.....	8.00
Loss of great toe.....	6.00
Loss of any other toe and metatarsal.....	6.00
Loss of any other toe.....	2.00
Chopart's amputation of foot, with good results.....	14.00
Pirogoff's modification of Syme's [amputation of foot to instep].....	17.00
Small varicocele.....	No rate.
Well-marked varicocele.....	No rate fixed.
Inguinal hernia, which passes through the external ring.....	10.00

<sup>1</sup> The rate of \$18 per month may be proportionately divided for any degree of disability established for which pension laws make no specific provision, and the minimum pension is fixed by law at \$6. Certain minor disabilities are still rated at less than \$6, and the smaller amount applies for each disability in cases where two or more minor disabilities are combined. Rates for partial deafness (under \$30 a month) are fixed by the Secretary of the Interior. (C. S., 8974, 9072, and 8962.)

	Per month.
Inguinal hernia, which does not pass through the external ring.....	\$6.00
Double inguinal hernia, each of which passes through the external ring.....	14.00
Double inguinal hernia, one of which passes through the external ring and other does not.....	12.00
Double inguinal hernia, neither of which passes through the external ring..	8.00
Femoral hernia.....	10.00

APPENDIX D.—MONTHLY PENSION RATES<sup>1</sup> FOR WIDOWS OR OTHER DEPENDENTS OF MEN KILLED OR DYING AS A RESULT OF SERVICE.<sup>2</sup>

WIDOWS, ETC., OF ARMY OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN.

	Per month.
Of lieutenant colonel and all officers of higher rank.....	\$30.00
Of major, surgeon, and paymaster.....	25.00
Of captain, provost marshal, and chaplain.....	20.00
Of first lieutenant, assistant surgeon, deputy provost marshal, and quartermaster.....	17.00
Of second lieutenant and enrolling officer.....	15.00
Of all enlisted men.....	12.00

WIDOWS, ETC., OF OFFICERS AND ENLISTED MEN OF NAVY AND MARINE CORPS.

Of captain and all officers of higher rank, commander, lieutenant commanding and master commanding, surgeon, paymaster, and chief engineer ranking with commander by law in Navy; and lieutenant colonel and all of higher rank in Marine Corps .....	30.00
Of lieutenant, passed assistant surgeon, surgeon, paymaster, and chief engineer ranking with lieutenant by law; major in Marine Corps.....	25.00
Of master (now lieutenant, junior grade), professor of mathematics, assistant surgeon, assistant paymaster, and chaplain; captain in Marine Corps.....	20.00
Of first lieutenant in Marine Corps.....	17.00
Of first assistant engineer, ensign, and pilot; second lieutenant in Marine Corps.....	15.00
Of cadet midshipmen, passed midshipmen, midshipmen clerks of admirals, of paymasters, and of officers commanding vessels, second and third assistant engineers, master's mate, and warrant officers.....	12.00
Of all enlisted men, except warrant officers.....	12.00

<sup>1</sup> Supplementary allowance of \$2 monthly is granted for each fatherless child under 16.

<sup>2</sup> These rates apply also to all enlisted men and to officers who are not eligible to retirement pay for a disability equivalent to ankylosis of wrist, except that for enlisted men the rate is \$8 and for cadet midshipmen, etc., the rate is \$10. Double rate is allowed for death or disability due to aviation duty in Navy or Marine Corps.

## APPENDIX E.—ARMY RETIREMENT SYSTEM, REGULAR ARMY ONLY.

Person eligible.	Service.	Age or other reason.	Amount.
Any officer, upon his own application.	40 consecutive years, or 30 years at discretion of the President.	.....	
Any officer, at discretion of President, without making application.	.....	62 years.....	
Do.....	45 years.....		
Any officer.....	.....	64 years.....	
Do.....	.....	Incapacitated for active service by physical disability incurred in line of duty.	
Do.....	.....	Physical disability not incurred in line of duty.	Retired with 75 per cent of pay of rank held at retirement or "wholly retired" with 1 year's pay and allowances of rank at time of retirement. (C. S., 2053, 2061, 2063, 2064, 2140. M. L., 660.)
Any officer below rank of major.	.....	If found upon examination for promotion to be incapacitated for service by physical disability incurred in line of duty.	75 per cent of rank to which seniority entitled him to be promoted. (C. S., 1897. M. L., 930.)
Any officer below rank of brigadier general.	.....	Failure to pass examination for promotion for any reason other than physical disability incurred in line of duty, followed by second failure after suspension of promotion for 1 year.	Honorably discharged from service with 1 year's pay. (C. S., 1897-1897a. M. L., 930, 930b.)
Officer of Medical Reserve Corps.	40 years.....	70 years.....	Retirement pay of first Lieutenant. (C. S., 2049. M. L., 748, 749.)
Any officer supernumerary to permanent organization of Army as provided by law.	5 years or more.....	Upon his own request.	1 year's pay for each 5 years of service; maximum, 3 years' pay. (C. S., 2062. M. L., 998.)
Any enlisted man (private or noncommissioned officer).	30 years.....		75 per cent of pay and allowances when retired. (Retirement allowances fixed at \$9.50 plus \$6.25.) Minimum: \$18.75 plus \$15.75. Maximum: \$74.25 plus \$15.75. <sup>2</sup> (C. S., 2082-2088. M. L., 713-715, 1038-1042.)
Widow of officer or enlisted man, or other person designated by him.	On active list of Army.	Death of officer or man from wounds or disease not the result of his own misconduct. Death resulting from aviation accident.	6 months' pay. (C. S., 2165. M. L., 1061.)
Any man who has been awarded a medal of honor for distinguished gallantry.	Military service in any war.	65 years.....	1 year's pay. (C. S., 1867e. M. L., 889n.)
			\$10 monthly, in addition to any other pay or pension. (C. S., 1941a-e. M. L., 1014a-f.)

<sup>1</sup> Officer who served with credit during Civil War is retired with rank and pay 1 grade above that he held on retirement. (C. S., 2066, 2068a-e. M. L., 909a-d.)

Officers detailed for duty on Isthmus of Panama with Canal Commission for 3 years or more, not otherwise advanced in rank by act of Mar. 4, 1915, to be retired (when they are retired) with grade higher. (C. S., 2068a, M. L., 927c.)

<sup>2</sup> Soldier who has received a certificate of merit (\$2 monthly), continues to receive the full allowance herefor after retirement. (Manual for the Quartermaster Corps, 1916, sections 1491-1493. U. S. Army Regulations 1917, section 1341.)

NOTE ON ARMY PAY.<sup>1</sup>

*Officers.*—In the United States Army the pay of officers ranges from \$11,000, that of lieutenant general, to \$1,700, that of second lieutenant. An increase of 10 per cent is allowed when serving outside of the United States (except in the Canal Zone, Panama, Porto Rico, or Hawaii).

Officers below the rank of brigadier general receive a 10 per cent increase for each five years of service, not to exceed 40 per cent (except that the maximum pay of colonel may not exceed \$5,000, of lieutenant colonel \$4,500, or of major \$4,000). Aviation officers of the Signal Corps receive an increase of 25 per cent, junior military aviators 50 per cent, and military aviators 75 per cent. Quarters, heat, and light, in kind, or commutation therefor, are also allowed at rates varying with rank from the minimum of two rooms, with heat and light, allowed to a second lieutenant. The commutation of officers' quarters is rated at \$12 monthly per room, and the commutation of heat and light varies with number of rooms, season, and climate.

An officer's retirement pay amounts to 75 per cent of the salary, without allowances, to which he is entitled at the time of this retirement. The officer who is disabled because of wounds received in battle is entitled to increases in retirement pay corresponding to the increases in active service pay to which he would have been entitled for additional years of active service in the same rank. These increases in retirement pay amount to 10 per cent of the lowest retirement pay of the officer's rank and are granted for each 5 years since the officer entered service, up to 20 years for officers having rank of major or lower, and up to 15 years for officers having rank of colonel or lieutenant colonel. For officers of higher rank the salary, and therefore the retirement pay, are uniform without a longevity increase. It should be especially noted that this increase in retirement pay granted for longevity after retirement is not allowed to an officer retired for any cause other than disability resulting from wounds in battle.

*Enlisted men.*—Enlisted men, during their first term of enlistment, receive from \$15, private or private second grade, to \$75 per month, quartermaster sergeant, senior grade, and those of equal rank; this is increased for each reenlistment up to the seventh, when a maximum of \$25 to \$99 is reached. Additional pay of \$2 to \$9 monthly is allowed for certain special details or qualifications, and a 50 per cent increase is granted to an "aviation mechanician." A certificate of merit entitles a man to \$2 monthly.

<sup>1</sup> Based on Manual for the Quartermaster Corps, United States Army, 1916, sections 1200-1246, 2375, and "Army pay tables" compiled under the direction of the Quartermaster General, United States Army, Aug. 1, 1916, with supplements including acts of May 12 and 18, 1917.

An increase of 20 per cent is granted for foreign service (not including service in the Canal Zone, Panama, Hawaii, or Porto Rico). The pay on which this increase is based includes additions for length of service, for certificate of merit, and for aviation mechanician, but not the additions for other special details or qualifications.

During the present emergency the pay of enlisted men receiving \$21 a month or less as base pay has been increased \$15 a month. Smaller increases are allowed to higher paid men, graded inversely with the salary, the enlisted man with base pay of \$45 monthly or more receiving an increase of \$6 monthly. The minimum paid to the men in European service to-day, therefore, is \$33 monthly.

Under certain circumstances quarters and rations for enlisted men may be commuted. The commutation of quarters is \$15 a month plus an allowance for heat and light varying with season and climate; the ration is commuted at 30 cents, \$1, or \$1.50 daily, according to circumstances.

#### APPENDIX F.—NAVY RETIREMENT SYSTEM.

Person eligible.	Service.	Age or other reason.	Amount.
Any commissioned or warrant officer.	30 years.....	Upon his own application and in the discretion of the President.	75 per cent of shore pay of rank. <sup>1</sup> (C. S., 2621, 2632, 2890, 2894.)
Do .....		Physical disability incident to duty.	
Do .....		Physical disability not incident to duty; or failure to secure promotion after case has been acted upon by two boards.	Either 50 per cent of shore pay for life, or "wholly retired" with 1 year's pay. (C. S., 2625, 2633, 2890, 2894.)
Do .....	64 years <sup>2</sup> .....		75 per cent of shore pay of rank. (C. S., 2623a, 2894.)
After June 30, 1920, captain.		57 years.....	
After June 30, 1920, commander.		51 years.....	$\frac{1}{2}$ per cent of shore duty pay of rank for each year of service; maximum, 75 per cent of shore duty pay. (C. S., 2697h.)
After June 30, 1920, lieutenant commander.		46 years.....	
Any enlisted man (including any petty officer).	30 years.....	Upon his own application.	75 per cent of pay of his rating plus \$15.75 monthly in allowances. (C. S., 2084.)
Any enlisted man.....	20 years.....	Disabled for sea service...	Pension equal to 50 per cent of the pay of his rating at the time of his discharge. <sup>3</sup>
Do .....		Disability resulting from aviation accident.	Full pay of his rating. <sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The Navy act of May 22, 1917, expressly provides that any officer of the permanent Navy or Marine Corps temporarily advanced in grade or rank under this act who shall be retired from active service under his permanent commission while holding such temporary rank, except for physical disability incurred in line of duty, shall be placed on retired list with grade or rank to which position in permanent Navy or Marine Corps would entitle him, and not be entitled to rights of retirement except for physical disability incurred in line of duty.

Two laws make provision for retirement with three-fourths of sea pay of next higher grade for officers serving with credit during the Civil War. (C. S., 2641, 2642.)

<sup>2</sup> Officers on the active list not below grade of commander who have received a vote of thanks from Congress for distinguished service in the Civil War are not subject to retirement except for cause until after 55 years of service. (C. S., 2624.)

<sup>3</sup> See discussion of Navy pay, pp. 223 to 226.

## APPENDIX F.—NAVY RETIREMENT SYSTEM—Continued.

Person eligible.	Service.	Age or other reason.	Amount.
Any enlisted man .....	10 years .....	Disability .....	"Suitable amount": Maximum, \$8 monthly. Double allowance for an aviation accident. (C. S., 9089, 9089, 8986a.)
Do .....	16 years .....	Upon his own request .....	Transferred to Fleet Naval Reserve; pay is one-third of base pay of the rating which he held at close of active service, plus all additions earned by length of service. <sup>1</sup>
Do .....	20 years .....	do .....	Transferred to Fleet Naval Reserve; pay is one-half of base pay of his rating with additions as above. <sup>1</sup> (C. S., 2900½b.)
Enlisted man in Fleet Naval Reserve.	30 years, including active and reserve.	.....	Reserve pay plus \$15.75 monthly allowance. <sup>1</sup>
Widow of officer or enlisted man on active list, or other person previously designated by him.	.....	Death of officer or man from wounds or disease contracted in line of duty. Death of officer or man from aviation accident in line of duty.	6 months' pay. (C. S., 2870.) 1 year's pay. (C. S., 2870b.)
Any man who has been awarded a medal of honor for distinguished gallantry.	Naval service in any war.	65 years .....	\$10 monthly in addition to any other pay or pension. (C. S., 1941a-e.)

<sup>1</sup> See discussion of Navy pay, pp. 223 to 226.

NAVY RETIREMENT—GENERAL NOTES.<sup>1</sup>

Provisions for officers and men in the Marine Corps are similar to those for the Army, except that retirement of officers with Civil War service is like that of Navy officers with Civil War service, and the provision for men disabled after 10 or 20 years of service in the Navy applies also to the Marine Corps. The administration is, however, under the Navy Department. (For Coast Guard retirement, see text of report, pp. 15 to 17. C. S. 2949-2952b, 2870, 2870b, 8459½a (3), 8459½b (23-29), 8542-8543.)

When the Naval Reserve is actively employed it is on the same pay footing as the Navy. When it is not actively employed its members are not eligible either to pension or retirement, except the men of the Fleet Naval Reserve. (See chart, above, and p. 225, following.) Also, the act of August 29, 1916 (39 Stat. L., 590) provides that after 20 years of service members who have performed required minimum amount of service shall upon application be retired and

<sup>1</sup> Based on "Navy pay tables" in Register of the Commissioned and Warrant Officers of the United States Navy and Marine Corps, Jan. 1, 1917.

receive a cash gratuity equal to total amount of retainer pay during last term of enrollment. This varies with rank and branch of service, and is in all cases only a nominal sum.

Enlisted men in the Navy who are disabled after 20 years or 10 years in the service may be granted an allowance in addition to a pension under the general pension laws. But the man who has served 10 years, but less than 20 years, may not receive as an allowance in addition to a pension more than one-fourth the rate of the pension.

Navy pay is composed of "base pay" and "permanent additions" thereto.

By "base pay" is meant the pay that a man would receive upon first enlistment in any rating. By "permanent additions" is meant the increases in pay a man receives for continuing in the service, for maintaining a good record, etc. These permanent additions are as follows:

1. An increase of \$1.36 per month for each successive reenlistment. The reenlistment must occur after honorable discharge from a previous enlistment or after discharge bearing recommendations for reenlistment, and the reenlistment must occur within four months of the date of such last discharge. A man in his sixth successive reenlistment would thus receive an addition of \$8.16 per month to his base pay.

2. Every citizen who reenlists receives—for his first reenlistment—an increase of \$5 to his monthly pay. For each successive reenlistment thereafter he receives an additional \$3. At the beginning of his seventh reenlistment this pay would amount to \$23 per month.

3. Men who maintain satisfactory records throughout an enlistment and serve in continuous service, etc., are issued good-conduct medals. These medals carry with them an increase in pay of 75 cents per month. A man holding six medals would receive on this account, \$4.50 per month.

4. Men who complete prescribed courses of instruction for seaman gunner or petty officer, and who receive from the Navy Department certificates to that effect, receive for such certificates, while in continuous service, the sum of \$2 per month.

"Base pay" plus "permanent additions" make the "total base pay" of a man. This total, by act of May 13, 1908, was increased by 10 per cent. Thus if a man's initial base pay is \$50 and his permanent additions \$15, the 10 per cent on the two (\$6.50) would make his total pay \$71.50 per month.

During the period of the present war the base pay of all enlisted men in the Navy has been increased by from \$6 to \$15 per month,

the largest increase going to the lowest paid men. Before the war the lowest rating received \$17.60 per month. During the continuance of the war the lowest rating will receive \$32.60 per month.

Aboard every ship there are many special ratings for which men are paid extra money. Some of these rates are: Coxswains of steam launches (\$5 per month), crew messmen (\$5), gun pointers (\$2 to \$10), gun captains (\$5), Navy mail clerk (\$5 to \$30), submarine duty (\$5), and certain qualified men for submarine duty while the vessel is engaged in diving receive additional pay not to exceed \$15 per month. Enlisted men in the Navy, while detailed for aviation duty involving actual flying, receive a 50 per cent increase above their base pay and permanent additions.

Temporary additions are not considered in reckoning retirement or disability pay. They are, however, included in the death gratuity which is paid to the widow or other designated person when a man is killed in service and which amounts to six times the monthly pay the man was receiving or, if his death occurred in an aviation accident, 12 times his monthly pay, at the date of his death.

In reckoning the pay of the man who is transferred to the Fleet Naval Reserve, disabled after 20 years' service, or retired after 30 years all permanent additions must be considered.

For example, a first-class seaman who has served 20 years and is disabled may have been receiving during his twentieth year of service the following monthly active pay:

Initial base pay.....	\$24.00
Continuous-service pay.....	5.44
Citizenship bonus.....	14.00
Seaman gunner.....	2.00
Good-conduct medal (75 cents for each completed term). .	3.00
 Total.....	 48.44
10 per cent increase under act of May 13, 1908.....	4.84
 53.28	 8.00
Temporary increase under act of May 22, 1917.....	61.28

If he is allowed half pay for disability his half pay is reckoned on the sum of the initial base pay, the continuous-service pay, and the citizenship bonus plus the general 10 per cent increase. The special allowances and the temporary increase would not in his case be included.

Initial base pay.....	\$24.00
Continuous-service pay.....	5.44
Citizenship bonus.....	14.00
	43.44
10 per cent increase (act of May 13, 1908).....	4.34
	2)47.78
Half pay for disability.....	23.89

In reckoning the retirement pay of a first-class seaman who has served 30 years as a seaman and is receiving a base pay of \$24 in active service the same permanent additions must be included, but the amounts will have increased with the longer service. Also, the special allowances for seaman gunners, etc., and for good conduct are continued without reduction for retired men. And a new allowance amounting to \$15.75 is added as commutation for the living received in active service.

Initial base pay.....	\$24.00
Continuous-service pay.....	9.52
Citizenship bonus.....	23.00
Total base pay.....	56.52

To the three-fourths of the total base, or \$42.39, should be added the money allowed for good-conduct medals and certificates of graduation from seaman gunner or petty officers' schools, plus the 10 per cent increase allowed under act of May 13, 1908, and the commutation of living, thus:

75 per cent total base.....	\$42.39
Seaman gunner.....	2.00
Good-conduct medal (75 cents for each completed term).....	4.50
	48.89
10 per cent increase (act of May 13, 1908).....	4.89
Allowance to retired men (commutation of living).....	15.75
	69.53

The retirement pay for petty officers after 30 years' service varies with their rating and for a chief petty officer who is a citizen of the United States and who holds a permanent appointment, a seaman gunner's certificate, and good-conduct medals may amount to \$107.48 per month.

The enlisted man who is transferred to the Fleet Naval Reserve after 16 or 20 years of service is subject to call to active duty, but during his reserve service, when he is not called to active duty, he receives monthly pay which is one-third or one-half of his base pay, and besides this he still receives the permanent additions which had been allowed for continuous service for citizenship, gunnery, or good-conduct medals. He may receive also a special 10 per cent increase

for heroism or, if he has been in the service 20 years, for efficiency, sobriety, etc.

The pay of the first-class seaman whose base pay is \$24 and who has been in the service 16 years is, therefore, reckoned as follows in the Fleet Naval Reserve:

Continuous service.....	\$4.08
Citizenship bonus.....	11.00
Seaman gunner.....	2.00
Good-conduct medal (75 cents for each completed term).....	2.25
	<hr/>
Initial base.....	19.33
	<hr/>
	24.00
	<hr/>
	43.33
One-third of initial base.....	8.00
Permanent additions as above.....	\$19.33
10 per cent of initial base plus additions (act of May 13, 1908).....	4.33
	<hr/>
	23.66
	<hr/>
10 per cent for heroism.....	31.66
	<hr/>
Monthly allowance.....	3.17
	<hr/>
	34.83

When the enlisted man in the Fleet Naval Reserve has completed 30 years of service (16 active and 14 reserve or 20 active and 10 reserve) he may be retired with the pay he had in the Reserve plus the \$15.75 monthly allowed as commutation of living to retired men.

In addition to all other retirement pay or pension, the enlisted man who is 65 years old may receive a medal of honor for a record of distinguished gallantry in the face of the enemy. This includes an allowance of \$10 monthly.

*Officers' pay.*—The annual pay of officers of the United States Navy ranges from \$10,000 (that of admiral in command of fleet) to \$1,700 (that of ensign). Those below the rank of vice admiral, second in command, receive an increase of 10 per cent for sea service and for service outside the United States. Officers of the Navy below the rank of rear admiral and officers of the Marine Corps below the rank of brigadier general receive an increase of 10 per cent for each 5 years of service, not to exceed 40 per cent in all (except that the maximum pay of captain may not exceed \$5,000, of commander \$4,500, nor of lieutenant commander \$4,000). Officers of the Navy and Marine Corps appointed student aviators and detailed for aviation duty receive an increase of 35 per cent of rank and service and those who have qualified as naval aviators an increase of 50 per cent.

Warrant officers receive annually during the first three years of service \$1,125 while on shore duty and \$1,500 when on duty at sea; this is increased every three years until the maximum of \$2,000 is reached for shore duty and \$2,250 for sea duty.

Commutation of quarters, heat, and light is allowed both commissioned and warrant officers while on shore duty, provided there are no public quarters for their accommodation. The rates are the same as those allowed to the Army and noted on page 220.

APPENDIX G.—PRESENT PROVISIONS FOR SERVICE PENSIONS FOR SURVIVORS OF SPECIFIED WARS AND FOR THEIR WIDOWS AND CHILDREN.

SURVIVORS.

Beneficiaries.	Service.	Age or other reason.	Amount.
Indian wars: Surviving officers and enlisted men, including marines, militia, and volunteers in Indian wars prior to 1861. (C. S. 9058-9067.)	30 days in military or naval service of the United States, or shorter period if personally named for specific service in a resolution of Congress.		
Survivors of Texas Volunteers (1859-1861), Tyler's rangers of 1864, and "military service of United States" in specified Indian wars, 1865-1891. (39 Stat. L., 1199.)	30 days, or entire campaign if less than 30 days.	.....	\$20 monthly. (C. S., 9067, and 39 Stat. L., 1199.)
Mexican War: Surviving officers and enlisted men, including marines, militia, and volunteers, during Mexican War.	60 days or more in military or naval service of the United States, or any period if actually engaged in battle or personally named for specific service in congressional resolution. (C. S., 9036.)	62 years..... 70 years..... 75 years.....	\$12 monthly. <sup>1</sup> (C. S., 8964, 9044.) \$15 monthly. <sup>1</sup> (C. S., 8964.) \$20 monthly. <sup>1</sup> (C. S., 8964.)
Any person serving during Mexican War. (C. S., 8968-8969.)	60 days or more in military or naval service of United States.	.....	\$30 monthly. (C. S., 8968.)
Civil War, act of June 27, 1890: Any person who served during the Civil War. (C. S., 8937.)	90 days or more in the military or naval service of United States.	Incapacitated for manual labor by any permanent mental or physical disability, not the result of vicious habits.	\$6 to \$12 monthly, proportioned to degree of inability to earn a support. <sup>2</sup>
Civil War, act of Feb. 6, 1907: Any person who served during the Civil War. (C. S., 8964.)	90 days or more in the military or naval service of United States.	62 years..... 70 years..... 75 years.....	\$12 monthly. <sup>3</sup> \$15 monthly. <sup>3</sup> \$20 monthly. <sup>3</sup>
Civil War, act of May 11, 1912: Any person who served during the Civil War. (C. S., 8968-8972.)	90 days or more in military or naval service of the United States.	62 years or over.....	\$13 to \$30 monthly, according to age and length of service. See Appendix H.
Do.....		Unfit for manual labor as result of wound or disease incurred in line of duty.	\$30 monthly.
Civil War, act of Aug. 5, 1892: Women employed by surgeon general of Army as nurses, under contract or otherwise, or by authority recognized by War Department. (C. S., 9070.)	6 months or more of actual service.	Unable to earn a support.	\$12 monthly.

<sup>1</sup> Pensioners may receive, upon application, \$30 monthly under act of May 11, 1912. (C. S., 8971.)

<sup>2</sup> Act of Mar. 4, 1907, allowed pensioner, upon his own application, to receive pension under act of Feb. 6, 1907, instead of under former act. The act of May 11, 1912, allowed similar election.

<sup>3</sup> Pensioner under this act may, upon application, be transferred to act of May 11, 1912.

## APPENDIX G.—PRESENT PROVISIONS FOR SERVICE PENSIONS FOR SURVIVORS OF SPECIFIED WARS AND FOR THEIR WIDOWS AND CHILDREN—Continued.

## WIDOWS AND CHILDREN.

Beneficiaries.	Service of deceased.	Cause of death.	Date of marriage.	Age.	Amount.
War of 1812: Widow <sup>1</sup> of Army officer or enlisted or drafted man in War of 1812. (C. S., 9036-9037.)	14 days in military or naval service of United States or less if in any engagement.			70 years.....	\$12 monthly. (C. S., 8980.) \$20 monthly. (C. S., 8981a.)
Indian wars: Widow <sup>1</sup> of officer or enlisted man, including marines, militia, volunteers in Indian wars prior to 1861. (C. S., 9058-9066.)	30 days, or, if personally named in a congressional resolution, less than 30 days.				\$12 monthly. (C. S., 8980; 39 Stat. L., 1199.)
Widows <sup>1</sup> of those in Indian wars 1865-1891. (39 Stat. L., 1199.)	30 days in military service of United States, or entire campaign if less than 30 days.		Before Mar. 4, 1917.		
War with Mexico: Widow <sup>1</sup> of officer or enlisted man, including marines, militia, or volunteers in Mexican War. (C. S., 9036.)	60 days, or any period if actually engaged in a battle or personally named in a congressional resolution.			62 years; or if subject to dependency recognized by pension laws of United States. 70 years.....	\$12 monthly. (C. S., 8983.) \$20 monthly. (C. S., 8981a.)
Civil War, acts of Apr. 19, 1908, <sup>2</sup> and Sept. 8, 1916:			Before June 27, 1905. (C. S., 8981c.)		\$12 monthly. (C. S., 8984.)
Widow of officer or enlisted man in the Civil War.	90 days or more in military or naval service of the United States.		Prior to end of husband's service in Civil War. Before June 27, 1905.		\$20 monthly. (C. S., 8981a.)
Civil War, act of June 27, 1890, as amended. <sup>2</sup> Child or children of deceased officer or soldier in service of United States during Civil War: 1. If mother is widow. 2. If there is no widow, or if she has been remarried or deemed an improper person to care for child. (C. S., 8982.)	90 days.....		Parents married prior to June 27, 1890. (C. S., 8982.)	Under 16; or over 16 if insane, idiotic, or otherwise permanently helpless provided child was under 16 at time of father's death (C. S., 8982.)	1. \$2 monthly, for each child. 2. Children receive the widow's pension of \$12 and the supplementary allowance of \$2 for each child. (C. S., 8982-8983.)

<sup>1</sup> Children receive no pension under service acts relating to War of 1812, Indian wars, or War with Mexico.<sup>2</sup> The act of Apr. 19, 1908, has superseded the provisions for widows under act of June 27, 1890.

## APPENDIX H.—SERVICE PENSIONS FOR CIVIL-WAR SURVIVORS UNDER ACT OF MAY 11, 1912. (C. S., 8968.)

Length of service.	Monthly amount for specified ages.			
	62 years but under 66.	66 years but under 70.	70 years but under 75.	75 years and over.
90 days.....	\$13.00	\$15.00	\$18.00	\$21.00
6 months.....	13.50	15.50	19.00	22.50
1 year.....	14.00	16.00	20.00	24.00
1 year 6 months.....	14.50	16.50	21.50	27.00
2 years.....	15.00	17.00	23.00	30.00
2 years 6 months.....	15.50	18.00	24.00	30.00
3 years or more.....	16.00	19.00	25.00	30.00

## APPENDIX I.—PRINCIPAL CHANGES SINCE 1860 IN PENSIONS GRANTED FOR DISABILITY OR DEATH IN SERVICE.

## SURVIVORS.

Date of act.	Service and beneficiary.	Monthly allowance.
July 22, 1861.....	Army pension. Volunteers in new Army to be on the same footing as Regulars; half pay for total disability; inferior disability in proportion. (12 Stat. L., 270.)	\$8 to \$47.50.
July 14, 1862.....	Army and Navy. Define beneficiaries. Fix rates for total disability by rank, with new maximum. (12 Stat. L., 566, 625.)	\$8 to £30.
July 10, 1862.....		
July 17, 1862.....	Navy pensions. Maximum rate for disability incurred in line of duty increased to amount of monthly pay. (12 Stat. L., 608.)	
July 4, 1864.....	{ Army and Navy. Introduce and extend military and naval pensions higher than half pay of private, granted without respect to rank, for permanent specific disabilities. (13 Stat. L., 387, 499; 14 Stat. L., 56.)	
Mar. 3, 1865.....		See Appendix B.
June 6, 1866.....		
July 25, 1866.....	Army and Navy pensions. Applies amended rates to persons disabled before Mar. 4, 1861, except Revolutionary War pensioners. (14 Stat. L., 230.)	
Mar. 2, 1867.....	Navy pensions. Special allowance in addition to general pension for disabled sailors and petty officers who have served 10 years or 20 years. 20 years: Half pay of rating in lieu of home at naval asylum. 10 years: In proportion to disability; maximum is half pay of rating and, if in receipt of general pension also, one-fourth of such pension. (C. S., 9088-9089.)	Half pay or less.
June 8, 1872.....	Army and Navy pensions. Rates for permanent specific disabilities increased. (17 Stat. L., 335.)	See Appendix B.
Mar. 3, 1873.....	Army and Navy pensions. Codifies existing provisions. Fixes maximum of \$18 for disabilities not specified, to be proportionately divided for inferior disabilities. (17 Stat. L., 566-577.)	
June 18, 1874.....	Army and Navy pensions. Rates for permanent specific disabilities increased. (C. S., 8950, 8954, 8955.)	
Feb. 28, 1877.....		Do.
June 17, 1878.....		
Jan. 25, 1879.....	Army and Navy pensions. Payment of arrears authorized. (C. S., 9002-9004.)	
Mar. 3, 1879.....		
Mar. 3, 1879.....		
June 16, 1880.....		
Mar. 3, 1883.....	Army and Navy pensions. Rates for permanent specific disabilities increased. (C. S., 8956, 8951, 8959; 23 Stat. L., 437; C. S., 8960, 8962, 8957, 8952, 8953.)	Do.
Mar. 3, 1885.....		
Aug. 4, 1886.....		
Aug. 27, 1888.....		
Feb. 12, 1889.....		
Mar. 4, 1890.....		
July 14, 1892.....	Mexican War. Pensioners now on rolls and wholly disabled for manual labor and in destitute circumstances. (C. S., 9042, 9043.)	Minimum rate increased to \$12.
Jan. 5, 1893.....		
Apr. 23, 1900.....	Army and Navy pensions. Minimum for inferior disability. (C. S., 9072.)	\$6.
Mar. 2, 1895.....		See Appendix B.
Jan. 15, 1903.....	Army and Navy. Rates for permanent specific disabilities increased. (C. S., 8963, 8961, 8958.)	
Mar. 2, 1903.....		
Apr. 8, 1904.....		
May 11, 1912.....	Civil War, military and naval service. Unable to perform manual labor as result of wound. (C. S., 8968-8972.)	\$30.
Mar. 3, 1915.....	Navy pension. Double rate allowed for disability from aviation in line of duty. (C. S., 8986a.)	

## APPENDIX I.—PRINCIPAL CHANGES SINCE 1860 IN PENSIONS GRANTED FOR DISABILITY OR DEATH IN SERVICE—Continued.

## WIDOWS AND OTHER DEPENDENTS.

Date of act.	Service and beneficiary.	Monthly allowance.
July 22, 1861.....	Army pensions. Widow or legal heirs of man killed in battle (volunteers in new army raised for the Civil War). (12 Stat. L., 270.)	\$100 lump sum.
July 14, 1862.....	Army and Navy pensions. Widow or children under 16 years old, or dependent parents or brothers or sisters under 16, of man killed in service or as result of injury in line of duty are to receive pension the deceased would have received for "total disability." Amount varies with rank. (See Appendix D.) (12 Stat. L., 566, 625; 13 Stat. L., 387, 499; 14 Stat. L., 56.)	\$8 to \$30.
July 16, 1862.....		
July 4, 1864.....		
Mar. 3, 1865.....		
June 6, 1866.....		
July 25, 1866.....	Army and Navy pensions: Widow receives supplementary monthly allowance for each child under 16 years old. Widows on roll because of deaths before Mar. 4, 1861, and subsequent to Revolution receive pensions at amended rates. (14 Stat. L., 230.)	\$2 \$8 to \$30.
July 27, 1868.....	Army and Navy pensions. Widow is not to be deprived of supplementary allowance for the children because they are inmates of a home. Widow does not receive allowance on behalf of children of a former wife unless they are in her charge. Minimum for widow receiving pension because of husband's service in Revolutionary War. (15 Stat. L., 235, 237.)	\$8.
Mar. 3, 1873.....	Army and Navy pensions. Codifies existing laws and defines legitimacy of child for their administration. (17 Stat. L., 566-577.)	
Jan. 25, 1879.....	Army and Navy pensions. Arrears are to be paid. (C. S., 9002-9004.)	
Mar. 3, 1879.....		
Mar. 19, 1886.....	Army and Navy pensions. Minimum rate for widows (married before 1866), for children, if there is no widow or she has remarried, and for dependent relatives. (C. S., 8980.)	\$12.
June 27, 1890.....	Army and Navy pensions. Provisions concerning dependency of parents are amended. Helpless children are to continue to receive pension for life. (C. S., 8992.)	
Mar. 3, 1901.....	Army and Navy pensions. Widow who had forfeited pension through remarriage and has again become a widow may receive pension if she was wife of officer or enlisted man during his period of service and is left without means of support. (C. S., 8993-8995.)	
Feb. 28, 1903.....		
Mar. 3, 1915.....	Navy pension. Widows (or other dependents) receive double rate if death is due to aviation accident in line of duty. (C. S., 8986a.)	\$24 to \$60.
Sept. 8, 1916.....	Army and Navy. Widows of men who served in Civil War, Mexican War, or War of 1812, if they are now 70 years old, or widows of men who served in Civil War if they were married before close of Civil War service. (C. S., 8981a-b.)	Minimum, \$20.

## APPENDIX J.—PRINCIPAL CHANGES SINCE 1860 IN PENSIONS GRANTED FOR SERVICE IN SPECIFIED WARS.

	SURVIVORS.	Monthly allowance.
April 1, 1861—Revolutionary War:		
Survivors already on rolls at half their pay to receive annually \$100 additional. (13 Stat. L., 39.)		
February 14, 1871—War of 1812:		
Sixty days' service or having been personally named in a congressional resolution. (16 Stat. L., 411.)		\$8
March 9, 1878—War of 1812:		
Service period shortened to 14 days or participation in any engagement. (C. S., 9052-9057.)		8
January 29, 1887—Mexican War:		
Sixty days' service, or actually engaged in battle, or personally named by Congress, and 62 years old or disabled. (C. S., 9036-9041.)		8
June 27, 1890—Civil War:		
Ninety days' service and any disability not the result of vicious habits incapacitating for manual labor. (C. S., 8937.)	6 to 12	
July 27, 1892—Indian Wars before 1861 (specified campaigns):		
Thirty days' service or having been personally named in a congressional resolution. (C. S., 9058-9063.)		8
August 5, 1892—Civil War:		
Women nurses who served six months or more, if unable to earn a support. (C. S., 9070.)		12
January 5, 1893—Mexican War:		
For pensioners on roll under act of January 29, 1887, if wholly disabled for manual labor and destitute. (C. S., 9042.)	Rate increased to	12

	Monthly allowance.	
April 23, 1900—Mexican War:		
Extends provision of January 5, 1893, to all pensionable survivors.....		\$12
May 9, 1900—Civil War:		
Under act of June 27, 1890, "each and every infirmity shall be duly considered." (C. S., 8937).....	6 to 12	
June 27, 1902. Indian Wars before 1861:		
Additional campaigns included under provisions of July 27, 1892. (C. S., 9065).....		8
March 3, 1903—Mexican War:		
All pensioners. (C. S., 9044).....	Rate increased to	12
February 6, 1907, and March 4, 1907—Mexican War:		
Rates increased with age—		
60 days' service, 62 years and over.....		12
60 days' service, 70 years and over.....		15
60 days' service, 75 years and over.....		20
(C. S., 8964-8967.)		
Same acts—Civil War:		
Age of 62 years accepted as pensionable disability and rates increased with age—		
90 days' service, 62 years and over.....		12
90 days' service, 70 years and over.....		15
90 days' service, 75 years and over.....		20
(C. S., 8964-8967.)		
May 30, 1908—Indian Wars before 1861:		
Additional campaigns included under provisions of July 27, 1892. (C. S., 9066).....		8
May 11, 1912—Mexican War:		
Sixty days' service. (C. S., 8968-8972).....		30
Same act—Civil War:		
Rates increased in proportion to age and length of service. (See Table II).....	13 to	30
Any survivor, any service, incapacitated as result of wound, etc.....		30
(C. S., 8968-8972.)		
February 19, 1913—Indian Wars before 1861:		
Pensioners under previous acts. (C. S., 9067).....	Rate increased to	20
March 4, 1917—Indian Wars since 1861:		
30 days' service, or entire campaign, and 62 years old. (39 Stat. L., 1199).....		20
WIDOWS AND CHILDREN.		
April 2, 1862. Revolutionary War:		
No new claims for pensions to be received except on behalf of widow whose husband had established claim, or children whose mother had established claim. (C. S., 9069.)		
July 27, 1868. Revolutionary War:		
Minimum for widow receiving pension because of husband's service in Revolutionary War. (15 Stat. L., 237.).....	Raised to	8
February 14, 1871. War of 1812:		
Widow of man who served 60 days or was personally named by Congress, if she was married before the treaty of peace which terminated the war. Children not included. (16 Stat. L., 411.).....		8
March 9, 1878. Revolutionary War:		
Widow of man who served 14 days. (20 Stat. L., 27).....		8
Same act. War of 1812:		
Husband's service period shortened to 14 days or participation in any engagement and limitation on date of marriage removed. Children not included. (C. S., 9052-9057).....		8
March 19, 1886. All widows and children who are pensionable under existing acts. (C. S., 8980.)		
Rate raised to.....		12
January 29, 1887. Mexican War:		
Widow of man who served 60 days or was actually engaged in battle or was personally named by Congress, if she is 62 years old or dependent. Children not included. (C. S., 9036-9037).....		8
June 27, 1890. Civil War:		
Widow of man who served 90 days, if she had married him before June 27, 1890, and is left without means of support.....		8
For each child under 16, supplementary allowance.....		2
Children receive the widow's pension and supplementary allowance, if there is no widow or widow has remarried.		
Helpless children receiving pension under 16 years of age retain it for life.		
(C. S., 8982.)		
July 27, 1892. Indian Wars before 1861 (specified campaigns):		
Widow of man who served 30 days or was personally named by Congress, children not included. (C. S., 9058-9063).....		8

	Monthly allowance.
May 9, 1900. Civil War:	
Widow may receive pension under act of June 27, 1890, if she has income not exceeding \$250. (C. S., 8937.)	\$8
June 27, 1902. Indian Wars before 1861:	
Additional campaigns included in provisions of July 27, 1892. (C. S., 9065.) Widow receives..	8
April 19, 1908. All pensionable widows or children receiving pension because there is no widow or she has remarried:	
Rate increased to.....	12
Supplementary allowance for each child is unchanged.....	2
(C. S., 8983-8985.)	
Same act. Civil War:	
Widow of man who served 90 days is eligible for pension, if she was married to him before June 27, 1890, without limitation as to income. (C. S., 8983-8985.)	12
May 30, 1908. Indian Wars before 1861:	
Additional campaigns included in provisions of July 27, 1892. (C. S., 9066.) Widow receives..	12
September 8, 1916: War of 1812 and Mexican War:	
Pensionable widow, if she is 70 years old. (C. S., 8981a.).....Rate increased to..	20
Same act. Civil War:	
Pensionable widow, if she was married before close of husband's Civil War service or is 70 years old, rate increased to.....	20
Extends date of marriage for widow to receive pension under act of April 19, 1908, to June 27, 1905.	
Widow dropped from pension roll because of remarriage is to be restored to roll if she again becomes a widow.	
(C. S., 8981a-d.)	
March 4, 1917. Indian Wars, 1861-1891:	
Widow of man who served 30 days or entire campaign. Children not included. (39 Stat. L., 1200.)	12

APPENDIX K.—ANNUAL DISBURSEMENTS (INCLUDING TREASURY SETTLEMENTS)<sup>1</sup> FOR PENSIONS TO UNITED STATES ARMY AND NAVY, 1860-1916.

[Data from annual reports of United States Commissioner of Pensions.]

Year ended June 30—	Number of pensioners.	Disbursements for pensions.		
		Total.	Army.	Navy.
			\$4,841,059,361.74	\$134,151,842.08
Total.....	2,841,975,207,201.05			
1860.....	11,284	1,103,562.03	965,486.24	138,075.79
1861.....	10,709	1,073,061.55	922,892.99	150,168.56
1862.....	10,232	790,384.76	676,113.60	114,271.16
1863.....	14,791	21,025,139.91	885,068.47	144,074.61
1864.....	51,135	34,504,616.92	4,340,368.60	164,217.92
1865.....	85,986	8,525,153.11	8,319,672.49	205,480.62
1866.....	126,722	15,450,549.88	15,158,598.64	291,951.24
1867.....	155,474	20,784,789.69	20,552,948.47	231,841.22
1868.....	169,643	23,101,509.36	22,811,183.75	290,325.61
1869.....	187,963	28,513,247.27	28,168,323.34	344,923.93
1870.....	198,686	29,351,488.78	29,043,237.00	308,251.78
1871.....	207,495	28,518,792.62	28,081,542.41	437,250.21
1872.....	232,229	29,752,746.81	29,276,921.02	475,825.79
1873.....	238,411	26,982,063.89	26,502,528.96	479,534.93
1874.....	236,241	30,206,778.99	29,603,159.24	603,619.75
1875.....	234,821	29,270,404.76	28,727,104.76	543,300.00
1876.....	232,137	27,936,209.53	27,411,309.53	524,900.00
1877.....	232,104	28,182,821.72	27,659,461.72	523,360.00
1878.....	223,998	26,786,009.44	26,251,725.91	534,283.53
1879.....	242,755	33,664,428.92	33,109,339.92	555,089.00
1880.....	250,802	56,689,229.08	55,901,670.42	787,558.66
1881.....	268,830	50,583,405.35	49,419,905.35	1,163,500.00
1882.....	285,697	54,313,172.05	53,328,192.05	984,980.00
1883.....	303,658	60,427,573.81	59,468,610.70	958,963.11
1884.....	322,756	57,912,387.47	56,945,115.23	967,272.22
1885.....	345,125	65,171,937.12	64,222,275.34	949,661.78
1886.....	365,783	64,091,142.90	63,034,642.90	1,056,500.00
1887.....	406,007	73,752,997.08	72,464,236.69	1,288,760.39
1888.....	452,557	78,950,501.67	77,712,789.27	1,237,712.40
1889.....	489,725	88,842,720.58	86,996,502.15	1,846,218.43
1890.....	537,944	106,093,850.39	103,808,850.39	2,285,000.00
1891.....	676,160	117,312,690.50	114,744,750.83	2,567,939.67
1892.....	876,068	139,394,147.11	135,914,611.76	3,479,535.35
1893.....	966,012	156,906,637.94	153,045,460.94	3,861,177.00
1894.....	969,544	139,986,726.17	136,495,965.61	3,490,760.56
1895.....	970,524	139,812,294.30	136,156,808.35	3,655,485.95
1896.....	970,678	138,220,704.46	134,632,175.88	3,588,528.58
1897.....	976,014	139,949,717.35	136,313,914.64	3,635,802.71
1898.....	993,714	144,651,879.80	140,924,348.71	3,727,531.09
1899.....	991,519	138,355,052.95	134,671,258.68	3,683,794.27
1900.....	993,529	138,462,130.65	134,700,597.24	3,761,533.41
1901.....	991,735	138,531,483.84	134,743,790.81	3,787,693.03
1902.....	999,446	137,504,267.99	133,655,245.75	3,849,022.24
1903.....	996,545	137,759,653.71	133,922,252.95	3,837,400.76
1904.....	994,762	141,093,571.49	137,010,616.93	4,082,954.56
1905.....	998,441	141,142,561.33	136,945,595.26	4,197,166.07
1906.....	985,971	139,000,288.25	134,796,283.62	4,204,004.63
1907.....	967,371	138,155,412.46	133,906,700.66	4,248,711.80
1908.....	951,687	153,093,086.27	148,158,735.77	4,934,350.50
1909.....	946,194	161,973,703.77	156,636,689.29	5,337,014.48
1910.....	921,083	159,974,056.08	154,638,598.81	5,335,457.27
1911.....	892,098	157,325,160.35	151,932,675.04	5,392,455.31
1912.....	860,294	152,986,433.72	147,666,611.64	5,319,822.08
1913.....	820,200	174,171,660.80	168,149,975.96	6,021,684.84
1914.....	785,239	172,417,546.26	166,369,641.78	6,047,904.48
1915.....	748,147	163,518,266.14	159,707,790.75	5,810,475.39
1916.....	709,572	159,155,089.92	153,448,386.51	5,706,703.41

<sup>1</sup> Payments by Treasury Department to beneficiaries whose pensions had reverted to the Treasury because they could not be located when pensions were due.

<sup>2</sup> Not including \$4,003.17 paid from Navy pension and privateers act.

<sup>3</sup> This total is \$0.40 too much. See report of U. S. Pension Commissioner, 1864 pp. 653, 654.

<sup>4</sup> Including 2,073 on rolls of Southern States.

APPENDIX L.—DISABILITY AND SERVICE PENSIONS (EXCLUDING  
ENTS—NUMBER OF PENSIONERS AND

[Data from annual reports of United States Commissioner of Pen

Fiscal year ended June 30.	Grand total.		Pensions for disability.					
	Number of pensioners.	Amount paid.	Total.		Survivors.		Widows and other dependents.	
			Number of pensioners.	Amount paid.	Number.	Amount paid.	Number.	Amount paid.
Total.	284,946,792,242.90	\$2,735,635,725.89			\$1,916,325,408.16			\$819,310,317.73
1860...	11,284	1,103,562.03	11,284	1,103,562.03	5,358	467,810.93	5,926	635,751.10
1861...	10,709	1,073,061.55	10,709	1,073,061.55	5,215	469,549.39	5,494	603,512.16
1862...	8,159	790,384.76	8,159	790,384.76	4,341	361,549.75	3,818	428,835.01
1863...	14,791	1,029,143.08	14,791	1,029,143.08	7,821	437,725.97	6,970	591,417.41
1864...	51,135	4,504,616.52	51,135	4,504,616.52	23,479	1,440,975.27	27,656	3,063,641.25
1865...	85,986	8,525,153.11	85,986	8,525,153.11	35,880	2,206,342.06	50,106	6,318,811.05
1866...	126,722	13,459,996.43	126,722	13,459,996.43	55,032	3,872,161.90	71,070	9,587,834.53
1867...	155,474	18,619,956.46	155,474	18,619,956.46	71,856	6,505,773.83	83,618	12,114,182.63
1868...	169,643	24,010,981.99	169,643	24,010,981.99	73,957	7,582,156.85	93,686	16,428,285.14
1869...	187,903	28,422,884.08	187,903	28,422,884.08	82,859	9,509,354.99	105,104	18,913,529.09
1870...	198,686	27,780,805.81	198,686	27,780,805.81	87,521	9,137,362.43	111,165	18,643,443.38
1871...	207,495	33,077,383.63	206,768	33,074,317.58	92,667	12,494,565.73	114,101	20,579,751.85
1872...	232,229	30,169,341.00	212,102	27,855,931.53	96,854	10,294,588.34	115,248	17,561,343.19
1873...	238,411	29,185,289.52	215,092	26,417,378.95	101,234	10,725,797.49	113,858	15,091,581.46
1874...	236,241	30,593,749.56	213,309	28,388,900.21	104,008	11,027,553.22	109,301	17,361,346.99
1875...	234,821	29,683,116.63	213,783	27,794,516.56	107,114	11,934,109.61	106,669	15,860,406.05
1876...	232,137	28,351,599.69	212,944	26,816,789.56	110,033	12,046,820.65	102,911	14,769,968.91
1877...	232,104	28,122,668.48	214,603	26,826,476.75	115,921	13,155,163.55	98,727	13,671,313.20
1878...	223,998	26,530,792.10	209,866	25,467,301.58	121,242	13,271,339.48	88,624	12,195,902.10
1879...	242,755	29,642,430.10	209,910	26,435,204.93	120,994	14,982,867.79	82,946	11,452,337.11
1880...	250,802	37,046,185.88	215,914	33,597,417.36	135,272	20,876,940.64	80,642	12,720,476.72
1881...	268,830	49,723,147.52	233,903	46,719,733.77	155,212	34,531,541.57	78,691	12,188,192.20
1882...	285,697	53,924,566.20	253,902	51,422,982.72	175,499	39,218,215.71	78,403	12,203,868.01
1883...	303,658	60,064,099.23	277,391	57,824,132.07	201,111	44,807,719.81	76,280	13,016,412.20
1884...	322,756	56,908,597.66	299,346	54,943,406.66	221,572	41,416,331.08	77,774	13,527,075.58
1885...	345,125	64,933,288.12	324,968	63,207,000.59	244,201	47,845,006.93	80,767	15,361,993.66
1886...	365,783	363,758,645.65	350,847	62,155,359.62	268,807	46,285,072.17	82,040	15,870,287.45
1887...	406,007	47,74,447,639.92	384,709	71,520,613.79	297,726	50,179,146.66	86,983	21,341,467.13
1888...	452,557	578,756,847.44	419,800	74,641,770.65	320,835	53,970,451.09	92,965	20,671,319.56
1889...	489,725	68,260,597.56	555,887	84,319,883.45	356,031	57,338,580.29	99,856	26,981,303.16
1890...	537,941	7105,511,959.75	501,999	101,786,790.05	398,083	75,252,712.06	106,916	20,534,078.79
1891...	676,160	116,859,703.41	539,174	104,571,384.32	419,046	76,255,717.23	111,128	28,316,131.09
1892...	876,068	139,035,612.68	506,071	84,676,660.15	394,794	63,154,515.76	111,280	21,522,144.39
1893...	966,012	156,641,098.95	475,602	85,274,588.18	365,440	63,413,495.42	110,222	21,861,092.71
1894...	969,544	139,774,654.88	467,759	78,151,599.97	362,274	59,522,220.14	105,485	18,609,379.83
1895...	970,524	139,744,245.80	459,886	77,008,933.05	357,223	59,382,212.01	102,663	17,626,721.04
1896...	970,678	138,049,540.41	449,144	70,188,312.26	349,624	58,960,629.15	90,520	17,227,683.11
1897...	976,014	139,799,242.12	438,080	74,865,682.92	341,087	57,955,504.18	96,993	16,999,578.74
1898...	993,714	144,517,962.63	426,770	75,168,753.73	331,913	58,398,678.25	94,857	16,770,075.48
1899...	991,519	138,253,922.91	414,755	71,044,760.70	321,678	56,032,005.41	93,077	15,012,755.29
1900...	993,529	138,338,469.87	403,145	69,889,938.71	311,484	55,240,323.69	91,661	14,649,615.02
1901...	997,735	138,405,159.74	392,090	68,945,322.00	301,230	53,983,513.99	90,860	14,961,808.01
1902...	999,446	137,400,742.17	381,107	67,134,115.52	288,936	52,523,235.91	92,171	14,610,870.61
1903...	996,545	137,646,132.41	370,235	66,554,973.41	277,481	51,482,730.59	92,754	15,072,242.82
1904...	994,702	140,979,469.72	355,720	66,895,701.23	262,726	51,559,497.80	92,994	15,336,203.43
1905...	998,411	111,036,612.50	337,790	64,854,154.52	245,125	49,808,945.84	92,665	15,045,208.70
1906...	985,971	138,864,109.45	326,964	62,667,691.90	233,669	47,905,172.75	93,295	14,762,519.15
1907...	967,371	138,030,894.22	299,979	60,627,001.30	208,923	46,258,604.88	91,056	14,368,396.42
1908...	951,687	152,959,537.96	264,387	55,316,539.33	174,378	41,354,275.67	90,009	13,902,263.66
1909...	916,194	161,883,599.33	252,594	53,664,939.20	165,458	39,710,576.23	87,136	13,894,362.97
1910...	921,083	159,972,015.18	241,316	51,466,014.35	157,544	38,109,158.38	83,772	13,356,855.97
1911...	892,098	157,323,102.73	230,399	50,081,337.18	150,203	37,278,386.73	80,196	12,802,950.45
1912...	860,294	152,986,165.22	217,747	47,723,111.25	141,451	35,500,429.21	76,296	12,222,682.04
1913...	820,200	174,160,717.85	172,289	43,310,748.77	100,518	31,575,761.79	71,771	11,734,986.98
1914...	785,239	172,408,518.29	157,466	35,515,542.21	89,516	24,428,518.86	67,950	11,087,023.35
1915...	748,147	165,518,266.14	149,998	32,873,864.34	84,948	22,258,063.99	65,050	10,615,800.35
1916...	709,572	159,155,089.92	140,384	30,708,635.48	79,247	20,627,947.06	61,137	10,080,688.42

1 Payments by Treasury Department to beneficiaries whose pensions had reverted to the Treasury because they could not be located when pensions were due.

2 Exclusive of arrears, total, \$120,144.53.

3 Exclusive of arrears of \$39,189.56.

4 Exclusive of arrears of \$19,941.95.

TREASURY SETTLEMENTS)<sup>1</sup> PAID TO SURVIVORS AND TO DEPEND-  
ANNUAL DISBURSEMENTS, 1860-1916.

sions and data in office of Auditor of the Department of the Interior.]

Pensions for service.							
Total.		Survivors.		Widows and other dependents.		Nurses.	
Number of pensioners.	Amount paid.	Number.	Amount paid.	Number.	Amount paid.	Number.	Amount paid.
	\$2,211,156,517.01		\$1,604,651,773.16		\$604,711,615.55		\$1,793,128.30
727	3,066.05	727	2,555.05			511.00	
20,127	2,313,409.47	17,100	1,977,415.81	3,027	335,993.63		
23,319	2,707,910.57	18,266	2,078,606.98	5,053	639,303.59		
22,932	2,204,549.35	17,620	1,588,832.95	5,312	616,016.40		
21,038	1,888,600.07	15,875	1,355,599.86	5,163	533,000.21		
19,193	1,534,810.13	14,206	1,089,037.18	4,987	445,772.95		
17,411	1,290,206.73	12,802	934,657.82	4,609	361,548.91		
14,132	1,063,490.52	10,407	768,918.47	3,725	294,572.05		
32,815	3,207,225.20	11,621	1,014,525.66	21,194	2,192,699.54		
34,888	3,448,768.53	10,138	790,710.39	24,750	2,638,058.14		
34,927	3,003,413.75	8,898	621,612.30	26,029	2,381,800.95		
31,705	2,502,482.48	7,134	478,274.85	24,661	2,024,207.63		
26,257	2,230,877.22	4,931	357,334.81	21,336	1,882,542.41		
23,410	1,965,190.94	3,898	278,888.85	19,512	1,686,302.09		
20,157	1,726,287.53	2,945	208,021.20	17,212	1,518,266.33		
14,936	1,603,286.03	1,539	144,389.59	13,397	1,458,896.44		
21,293	1,927,026.13	8,572	158,985.69	12,726	1,768,040.44		
32,757	4,115,076.79	16,866	1,935,415.55	15,891	2,179,661.24		
33,838	3,940,714.11	17,668	1,849,699.57	16,170	2,091,014.54		
32,945	3,725,168.90	17,571	1,768,874.63	15,374	1,958,294.27		
145,986	12,287,855.09	117,775	9,456,727.04	28,211	2,831,128.05		
369,994	54,358,932.53	308,448	45,282,283.13	61,546	9,076,714.40		
490,350	71,366,510.82	393,982	56,133,573.07	96,084	15,214,594.80	284	18,312.95
501,785	61,643,054.86	391,694	46,834,053.62	109,677	14,743,318.38	414	65,682.86
510,638	62,740,312.75	393,734	48,223,866.77	116,405	14,337,225.72	499	79,220.26
521,534	61,861,225.15	398,350	46,897,099.22	122,644	14,579,939.21	540	84,189.72
537,931	64,934,159.20	405,742	48,022,331.04	131,529	16,521,548.49	663	90,279.67
568,944	69,379,208.90	425,943	51,351,502.80	140,346	17,021,076.71	655	106,629.39
576,764	67,209,162.21	431,773	50,318,247.18	144,338	16,791,365.36	653	99,549.67
590,334	68,448,531.16	404,380	51,580,866.13	149,358	16,767,211.83	646	100,453.20
605,645	69,459,837.74	446,769	51,842,196.27	158,226	17,520,503.87	650	97,137.60
618,339	70,266,626.65	449,873	51,764,799.99	167,832	18,408,464.19	634	93,362.47
623,310	71,091,159.00	451,251	51,962,961.72	174,435	19,038,470.48	624	89,726.80
639,042	74,083,768.49	457,589	54,182,693.30	180,847	19,806,421.32	606	94,653.87
660,651	76,182,457.96	472,033	56,020,130.76	188,015	20,068,151.87	603	94,175.33
659,007	76,196,717.55	467,235	56,306,958.24	191,193	19,803,654.65	579	86,104.06
667,392	77,403,892.92	471,014	57,171,569.10	195,536	20,149,958.89	542	82,364.93
657,300	97,642,998.63	483,693	76,566,198.47	203,997	21,000,148.09	510	76,652.07
693,600	108,278,660.15	467,099	75,478,824.04	226,023	32,728,207.11	478	71,629.00
679,707	108,506,000.83	444,636	74,187,856.02	234,689	34,251,140.88	442	67,003.93
661,699	107,241,765.55	419,847	72,125,959.35	241,446	35,053,949.27	406	61,556.93
642,547	105,262,993.97	396,549	69,575,638.55	245,636	35,631,927.59	362	55,427.83
647,911	130,849,969.08	402,787	94,686,149.48	241,796	36,113,262.97	328	50,556.63
627,773	135,897,967.08	380,815	100,600,119.10	246,666	36,247,268.58	292	45,588.40
598,149	132,644,401.80	352,500	96,484,903.58	245,374	38,116,895.29	275	42,602.93
569,188	128,446,454.44	323,873	92,193,952.45	245,063	36,212,564.79	252	39,937.20

<sup>5</sup> Exclusive of arrears of \$11,598.40.<sup>6</sup> Exclusive of arrears of \$14,515.72.<sup>7</sup> Exclusive of arrears of \$16,220.63.<sup>8</sup> Exclusive of arrears of \$13,076.27.<sup>9</sup> Exclusive of arrears of \$5,602.06.

## APPENDIX M.—NUMBER OF WIDOWS, OTHER DEPENDENTS, SURVIVORS, AND ARMY NURSES ON THE PENSION ROLL AT THE CLOSE OF EACH FISCAL YEAR, 1860-1916.

[Data from annual reports of the United States Commissioner of Pensions.]

Year ended June 30—	Grand total.	Widows and dependents.			Survivors.	Army nurses.
		Total.	Widows.	Other dependents.		
1860	11,284	5,926	.....	.....	5,358	.....
1861	10,709	5,494	.....	.....	5,215	.....
1862	10,232	3,818	.....	.....	4,341	.....
1863	14,791	6,970	.....	.....	7,321	.....
1864	51,135	27,644	.....	.....	23,491	.....
1865	85,968	50,104	.....	.....	35,882	.....
1866	126,722	71,070	.....	.....	55,652	.....
1867	155,474	83,618	.....	.....	71,856	.....
1868	163,643	93,686	.....	.....	75,957	.....
1869	187,963	105,104	.....	.....	82,859	.....
1870	198,686	111,165	.....	.....	87,521	.....
1871	207,495	114,101	.....	.....	93,394	.....
1872	232,229	115,248	.....	.....	113,954	.....
1873	238,411	118,911	.....	.....	119,500	.....
1874	236,241	114,613	55,819	58,764	121,628	.....
1875	234,821	111,832	54,687	57,145	122,989	.....
1876	232,137	107,898	53,329	54,569	124,239	.....
1877	232,104	103,381	51,830	51,551	128,723	.....
1878	233,998	92,349	50,490	41,859	131,649	.....
1879	242,755	2 <sup>1</sup> 04,140	.....	.....	138,615	.....
1880	250,802	105,392	66,534	38,858	145,410	.....
1881	268,830	104,720	70,632	34,088	164,110	.....
1882	285,697	103,064	70,921	32,143	182,633	.....
1883	303,658	97,616	66,655	30,961	206,042	.....
1884	322,756	97,286	67,033	30,235	225,470	.....
1885	345,125	97,979	66,275	31,704	247,146	.....
1886	365,783	95,437	63,670	31,767	270,346	.....
1887	406,007	99,709	65,822	33,887	306,298	.....
1888	452,557	108,856	73,037	35,819	343,701	.....
1889	489,725	116,026	78,564	37,462	373,699	.....
1890	537,944	122,290	84,331	37,950	415,654	.....
1891	676,160	139,339	100,710	38,629	536,821	.....
1892	876,068	172,826	130,932	41,894	703,242	.....
1893	966,012	206,306	161,490	44,816	759,422	284
1894	969,544	215,162	173,079	42,083	753,968	414
1895	970,524	219,068	179,192	39,876	750,957	499
1896	970,678	222,164	185,362	36,802	747,974	540
1897	976,014	228,522	194,021	34,501	746,829	663
1898	993,714	235,203	203,630	31,573	757,856	655
1899	991,519	237,415	208,728	28,687	753,451	653
1900	993,529	241,019	214,798	26,221	751,864	646
1901	997,735	249,086	224,563	24,523	747,999	650
1902	999,446	260,003	236,910	23,093	738,809	634
1903	996,545	267,159	245,814	21,375	728,732	624
1904	994,762	273,841	254,135	19,706	720,315	606
1905	998,441	280,680	262,098	18,582	717,158	603
1906	985,971	284,488	267,155	17,333	700,904	579
1907	967,371	286,892	270,767	16,125	679,937	542
1908	951,687	293,106	278,088	15,018	658,071	510
1909	946,194	313,159	298,853	14,306	632,557	478
1910	921,083	318,461	304,842	13,619	602,180	442
1911	892,098	321,642	308,613	13,029	570,050	406
1912	880,294	321,932	309,399	12,533	538,000	362
1913	820,200	316,567	304,923	11,644	503,305	328
1914	785,239	314,616	303,527	11,089	470,331	292
1915	748,147	310,424	299,858	10,566	437,448	275
1916	709,572	306,200	296,089	10,111	403,120	252

1 Including 2,073 on rolls of Southern States.

2 "Widows' roll" for 1879 was not analyzed.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 05708 4038

*[Continued from second page of cover.]*

Rural Child Welfare Series:

No. 1. Maternity and Infant Care in a Rural County in Kansas, by Elizabeth Moore. 50 pp., 4 pp. illus., and 1 chart. 1917. Bureau publication No. 26.

Miscellaneous Series:

No. 1. The Children's Bureau: A circular containing the text of the law establishing the bureau and a brief outline of the plans for immediate work. 5 pp. 1912. Bureau publication No. 1. (Out of print.)

No. 2. Birth Registration: An aid in protecting the lives and rights of children. 20 pp. 3d ed. 1914. Bureau publication No. 2.

No. 3. Handbook of Federal Statistics of Children: Number of children in the United States, with their sex, age, race, nativity, parentage, and geographic distribution. 106 pp. 2d ed. 1914. Bureau publication No. 5.

No. 4. Child-Welfare Exhibits: Types and preparation, by Anna Louise Strong. 58 pp. and 15 pp. illus. 1915. Bureau publication No. 14.

No. 5. Baby-Week Campaigns (revised edition). 152 pp. and 15 pp. illus. 1917. Bureau publication No. 15.

No. 6. Maternal Mortality from all Conditions Connected with Childbirth in the United States and Certain Other Countries, by Grace L. Meigs, M. D. 66 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 19.

No. 7. Summary of Child-Welfare Laws Passed in 1916. 74 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 21.

No. 8. Facilities for Children's Play in the District of Columbia. 72 pp., 25 pp. illus., and 1 map. 1917. Bureau publication No. 22.

No. 9. How to Conduct a Children's Health Conference, by Frances Sage Bradley, M. D., and Florence Brown Sherbon, M. D. 24 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 23.

No. 10. Care of Dependents of Enlisted Men in Canada, by S. Herbert Wolfe. 56 pp. 1917. Bureau publication No. 25.

No. 11. Governmental Provisions in the United States and Foreign Countries for Members of the Military Forces and their Dependents, prepared under the direction of Capt. S. Herbert Wolfe, Q. M., U. S. R., detailed by the Secretary of War. 236 pp. and 4 diagrams. 1917. Bureau publication No. 28.





BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



**3 9999 05708 7262**

MAR 4 1921

